

**The Ramakrishna Mission**  
**Institute of Culture Library**

**Presented by**

**Dr. Baridbaran Mukerji**

**RMICL-8**

---

**7297**











LIFE IN THE FORESTS

OF

THE FAR EAST.







# LIFE IN THE FORESTS

OF

## THE FAR EAST;

### OR TRAVELS IN NORTHERN BORNEO.

BY

SPENSER ST. JOHN, F.R.G.S., F.E.S.,

FORMERLY H.M.'S CONSUL-GENERAL IN THE ISLAND OF BORNEO,  
AND NOW

H.M.'S CHARGÉ D'AFFAIRES TO THE REPUBLIC OF HAITI.

WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS.

TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

SECOND EDITION, REVISED.

LONDON:

SMITH, ELDER AND CO., 65, CORNHILL.

M.DCCC.LXIII.



RMIC LIBRARY  
7297  
JON

## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION,

---

THE first edition of this work has been received in so favourable a manner, that I am more than satisfied. I have read over about thirty reviews, and have endeavoured in this edition to follow as far as possible those suggestions which appeared practicable, without completely changing the form and intention of the work. I must, however, distinctly affirm, that it was not my object to write an exhaustive book like Sir Emerson Tennant's masterly volumes on Ceylon: I proposed simply to give the results of my own observations, with such assistance as I could obtain from my immediate friends.

Borneo is, I believe, destined to be an island of great political and commercial importance to that nation which is sufficiently wise to secure the north-west coast, commanding as it does the China Seas, and possessing not only mineral and agricultural wealth, but some of the best harbours in the world. There is the land, but the strong government is wanting which would attract tens of thousands of those industrious Chinese, whom hunger has driven to join that rebellion which is now desolating the fairest provinces of China.



Let any one take up the map of Asia, and glance at the relative positions of these two countries. Here, to the north, is the most populous empire in the world, teeming with industrious hands, seeking a soil to cultivate, while within ten days' sail is a vast island almost unpeopled, but capable of affording support to at least a third of the population of China. For Borneo, be it remembered, stretches from  $4^{\circ} 20'$  south, to  $7^{\circ}$  north latitude, and from  $108^{\circ} 50'$  to  $118^{\circ} 55'$  east longitude, and is about 830 statute miles in its greatest length, and 700 in breadth.

It has been roughly calculated that the whole island contains but 3,000,000 inhabitants, but I need scarcely say that there are no data by which to judge accurately. We may, however, feel assured that the country is very thinly peopled, and that there is room for a vast immigration.

Borneo affords every variety of soil and climate, from the rich warm low-lands, to the steep hills and lofty mountains where the mighty rivers take their rise. These streams penetrate into the far interior, and are of incalculable advantage as affording the benefits of cheap transport, and along their banks the first immigrants might be located. Many of my readers will have doubtless heard of the expedition which is now preparing in England, to aid the Chinese Government in suppressing the rebellion, and that the whole affair is in good hands—the political arrangements being confided to Mr. Lay, and the naval to Capt. Sherard Osborne. It naturally occurred to these officers, that during their operations thousands of prisoners, men, women, and children, would fall

into their hands; if they were given up to the Chinese mandarins a wholesale massacre would take place, and yet it would be impossible to let them go, to be destroyed by the peasantry, or to starve to death. Give a bridge to a flying enemy, and there is Borneo ready to receive as many as the local authorities can provide for. Sarawak is the best point to commence with, as it is the only place where a regular government is established. Let even twenty thousand be settled there, and the trade of that rising little state would be doubled; but should the immigration once commence, it would doubtless assume great proportion and continue until every acre of useless jungle is cleared away, to give place to rice, pepper, gambir, sugar-cane, cotton, coffee, indigo, and those other products which flourish on its fertile soil.

Though far away in the west, I shall look with great interest upon any scheme destined to relieve the suffering multitudes of China, by removing them to an island where their exertions are required to enable it to take its place among the great producing countries of the world. I feel assured that the interest felt in England about the future of Borneo, is at present but the faint blush of the dawn, to be followed by the brightness of the midday sun.

To this edition I have added an introduction, a chapter on pirates, another on animals, as well as a full index, and have also corrected the whole book as carefully as I could, and occasionally introduced some new anecdote.

## P R E F A C E .

---

I HAVE explained in a short introduction the object and plan of the present volumes, and have little more to say, beyond a reference to the assistance I have received, and the plates and maps which accompany and illustrate them. In order to prevent mistakes, and correct my own impressions, I submitted a series of questions to four gentlemen who were intimately acquainted with the Dayak tribes, and they gave me most useful information in reply. To Mr. Charles Johnson and the Rev. William Chalmers I am indebted for very copious and valuable notes on the Sea and Land Dayaks; and to the Rev. Walter Chambers and the Rev. William Gomez for more concise, yet still interesting accounts of the tribes with whom they live.

To Mr. Hugh Low, the Colonial Treasurer of Labuan, I am under special obligations, as he freely placed at my disposal the journals he had kept during our joint expeditions, as well as those relating to some

districts which I have not visited. It is to be regretted that he has not himself prepared a work on the North-West Coast, as no man possesses more varied experience or a more intimate knowledge of the people.

With regard to the plates contained in this work, I am indebted to the courtesy of George Bentham, Esq., the President of the Linnean Society, for permission to engrave the figures of the *Nepenthes* from the admirable ones published in Vol. XXII. of that Society's Transactions, and which being of the size of life are the more valuable.

I have inserted, with Dr. Hooker's permission, his description of the Bornean *Nepenthes*; and it will always be a subject of regret that the British Government did not carry out their original intention of sending this able botanist to investigate the Flora of Borneo, which is perhaps as extraordinary as any in the world.

I have also to thank the Rev. Charles Johnson, of White Lackington, and Charles Bunyon, Esq., for the photographs which they placed at my disposal, and which have enabled me to insert, among other plates, the most life-like pictures of the Land and Sea Dayaks I have ever seen. To the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel I am also indebted for

their generous offer to place all their drawings at my disposal.

I must likewise draw attention to the exquisite manner in which the plates of the *Nepenthes* are coloured, and to the beauty of the engravings in general. They are admirably illustrative of the country, and do very great credit to the lithographers, Messrs. Day and Son, and to their excellent draughtsmen. I ought also to mention that the *Nepenthes* are drawn less than half the natural size, as it was found impracticable to introduce the full size without many folds, which would have speedily destroyed the beauty of the plates.

I will add a few words respecting the maps. The one of the districts around Kina Balu was constructed from the observations made during our two expeditions to that mountain. The map of the Limbang and Baram rivers is the result of many observations, and with regard to the position of the main mountains, I think substantially correct, as they were fixed with the aid of the best instruments. The third map is inserted in order to give a general idea of the North-West Coast, though the run of some of the rivers is laid down by conjecture.

# CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION . . . . .	PAGE 1
------------------------	-----------

## CHAPTER I.

THE SEA DAYAKS . . . . .	25
--------------------------	----

Habitat of the Sea Dayaks—Start for the Lundu—Inland Passages—Fat Venison—The Lundu—Long Village House—Chinese Gardens—Picturesque Waterfall—The Lundu Dayaks—Their Village—Gradual Extinction of the Tribe—A Squall—Child-birth—Girl Bitten by a Snake—Mr. Gomez—Ilis Tact—A Boa Seizes my Dog—Floating Islands—A Man found on one—Their Origin—The Batang Lupar—The Lingga—Alligators Dangerous—The Balau Lads—The Banks of the River—The Fort at Sakarang—The late Mr. Brereton—Sakarang Head-hunting—Dayak Stratagem—Peace Ceremonies—Sacred Jars—Farmhouse—Love of Imitation—*Illustrated London News*—Women—Men—Poisoning—Workers in Gold and Brass—Anecdote—Rambi Fruit—Pigs Swimming—The Bore—Land and Sea Breezes—The Rejang—Lofty Milanau House—Human Sacrifices—Swings—Innumerable Mayflies—Kanowit Village—Kayan Mode of Attack—Kanowit Dayaks—Men with Tails—Extraordinary Effect of Bathing in the Nile—Treachery—Bier—Customs on the Death of a Relative—Curious Dance—Ceremonies on solemnizing Peace—Wild Tribes—Deadly Effect of the Upas.

## CHAPTER II.

SOCIAL LIFE OF THE SEA DAYAKS . . . . .	58
---	----

Ceremonies at the Birth of a Child—Infanticide—Desire for Children—A Talkative and Sociable People—Great Concord in Families—Method of Settling Disputes—Marriage Ceremonies—Pride of Birth—Chastity—Punishment of Indiscreet Lovers—Bundling and Company-keeping—Love Anecdotes—Separations—Division of Household Duties—Flirting—Divorce—Burials—Religion—Belief in a Supreme Being—Good and Evil Spirits—The Small-pox—Priests—Some dress as Women—Mourning—Sacrifices—Human Sacrifices—Unlucky Omens—Reconciliation—Belief in a Future State—The other World—Dayaks Litigious—Head-feast—Head-hunting—Its Origin—Horrible Revenge—Small Inland Expeditions—Cat-like Warfare—Atrocious Case—Large Inland Expeditions—War-boats—Edible Clay—Necessity for a Head—Dayaks very Intelligent—Slaves—Objections to Eating certain Animals, or Killing others—Change of Names—Degrees of Affinity within which Marriages may take place—Sickness—Cholera—Manufactures—Agriculture—Method of taking Bees' Nests—Lying Heaps—Passports—Ordeals.—Language.

## CHAPTER III.

	PAGE
THE KAYANS OF BARAM . . . . .	91
Unaccountable Panic—Man Overboard—Fishing—Coast Scenery—Baram Point—Floating Drift—Pretty Coast to Labuan—Thunder and Lightning Bay—Bar of the Brunei—River Scenery—The Capital—Little Children in Canoes—Floating Market—Kayan Attack—The Present Sultan's Story—Fire-arms—Devastation of the Interior—Customs of the Kayans—Upas Tree—View of the Capital—The Fountains—The Baram—Kayan Stratagem—Wild Cattle—Banks of the River—Gading Hill—Town of Langusin—Salutes—First Interview—Graves—Wandering Kanowits—Appearance of the Kayans—Visit Singauding—Religion—Houses—Huge Slabs—Skulls—Women tattooed—Mats—Visit the Chiefs—Drinking Chorus—Extempore Song—Head-hunting—Effect of Spirits—Sacrifice—Ceremony of Brotherhood—Effect of Newly-cleared Jungle—War Dance—Firewood—Customs—Origin of Baram Kayans—Vocabularies—Trade—Birds' Nests—Destruction of Wealth—Manners and Customs—Iron—Visit Edible Birds' Nest Caves—The Caves—Narrow Escape—Two Kinds of Swallows—Neat House—Visit of Singauding—Visit to Si Obong—Her Dress—Hip-lace—Her Employments—Farewell Visit—Fireworks—Smelting Iron—Accident—Departure—Kayan Cannibals—Anecdotes—Former Method of Trading—Unwelcome Visitors.	

## CHAPTER IV.

THE LAND DAYAKS . . . . .	135
---------------------------	-----

Visit to the Left-hand Branch of the Sarawak River—Attack of Peguans—Sarawak River—Capture of English Ship—The Durian Fruit—Iron-wood Posts—Rapids—Rapid of the Corpse—Mountains—Village of San Pro—Lovely Scenery—Head-house—Cave—Upper Cave—Unfortunate Boast—Pushing up the Rapids—Story of the Malay Chief—Invulnerable Men—How to become one—Grung Landing-place—Sibungoh Dayaks—Dayak Canoes—Lovely Scenery—Uses of the Bumbu—Fish—Sharks in the Upper Waters—Repartee—Pigs Swimming—Farmhouses in Trees—Floods—Suspension Bridges—Chinese Traders—Dress of the Land Dayaks—System of Forced Trade—Interesting Tribe—Story of the Murder of Pa Mua—The Trial—Painful Scene—Delightful Bathing—Passing the Rapids—Walk to Grung—Dayak Paths—Village of Grung—Warm Reception—Ceremonies—Lingua Franca—Peculiar Medicine—Prayer—Sacred Dance—Sprinkling Blood—Effect of former System of Government—Language.

## CHAPTER V.

LAND DAYAKS OF SIRAMBAU.—THEIR SOCIAL LIFE . . . . .	162
--	-----

Madame Pfeiffer—Chinese Village—Chinese Maidens—Sirambau—Ascent of the Mountain—Difficult Climbing—Forests of Fruit Trees—Scenery—Sirambau Village—Houses—The "Look-out"—Scenery—Head-houses—The Chief, Mita—His Modest Request—Sir James Brooke's Cottage—Natural Bath-house—Chinese Gold Workings—Tapang Trees—Social Life of the Land Dayaks—Ceremonies at a Birth—Courtship—Betrothment—Marriage—Burial—Graves—The Sexton—Funeral Feast—Children—Female Chastity—Divorces—Cause of Separation—Anecdote.

## CHAPTER VI.

SOCIAL LIFE OF THE LAND DAYAKS—( <i>Continued</i> ) . . .	PAGE 178
---	-------------

Religion—Belief in Supreme Being—Traces of Hinduism—Sacrifices—Pamali or Interdict—Mr. Chalmers's Account of the Dayak Religion—A Future State—Spirits by Nature—Ghosts of Departed Men—Transformations—Catching the Soul—Conversion of the Priest to Christianity—Story—Other Ghosts—Custom of Pamali, or Taboo—Sacrifices—Things and Actions Interdicted—Not to Eat Horned Animals—Reasons for not Eating Venison—Of Snakes—The Living Principle—Causes of Sickness—Spirits Blinding the Eyes of Men—Incantations to Propitiate or Foil the Spirits of Evil—Catching the Soul—Feasts and Incantations connected with Farming Operations—The Blessing of the Seed—The Feast of First Fruits—Securing the Soul of the Rice—Exciting Night Scene—The Harvest Home—Singular Ceremony—Head Feasts—Offering the Drinking Cup—Minor Ceremonies—Images—Dreams—Love—Journeys of the Soul—Warnings in Sleep—Magic Stones—Anecdote—Ordeals—Omens—Birds of Omen—Method of Consulting them—Beneficial Effects of the Head Feasts—Languages of the Land Dayaks—Deer—The Sibuya's free from Prejudice—Story of the Cobra de Capella—Names—Change of Name—Prohibited Degrees of Affinity—Heights—Medical Knowledge—Priests and Priestesses—Origin of the latter—Their Practices—Manufactures—Agriculture—Story of the Origin of Rice—The Pleiades.

## CHAPTER VII.

THE SAMARAHAN RIVER AND THE CAVES OF SIRIH . . .	215
--	-----

A Storm—The Musquito Passage—The Samarahan—Rich Soil—The Malays—The Dayaks—The Malay Chief—The Sibuyau Village—A Pretty Girl—Dragons' Heads—Climbing Pole—Drinking—"The Sibuya's get no Headaches"—Force repelled by Force—Gardens—Left-hand Branch—Difficult Path—Hill of Munggu Babi—Former Insecurity—The Village—Welcome—Deer plentiful—Walk to the Sirih Caves—A Skeleton—Illustrative Story—Method of Governing—Torches—Enter the Recesses of the Cave—Small Chambers—Unpleasant Walking—Confined Passage—The Birds' Nests' Chamber—Method of gathering them—Curious Scene—The Cloudy Cave—Wine of the Tampui Fruit—Blandishments—Drinking—Dancing—Bukars Hair—Scenery—Walk—"The Sibuya's do get Headaches"—Lanchang—Rival Chiefs—Ancient Disputes—Deer Shooting—Wanton Destruction of Fruit Trees—Choice of a Chief—Return to Boat—The Right-hand Branch—The San Poks—Hot Spring—Tradition—Hindu Relics—The Female Principle—The Stone Bull—Superstition—Story.

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE MOUNTAIN OF KINA BALU (FIRST EXPEDITION) . . .	240
--	-----

First Ascent by Mr. Low—Want of Shoes—Set Sail for the Tampasuk—Beautiful Scenery—The Abai—Manufacture of Nipa Salt—Uses of the Nipa Palm—A Lanun Chief—Baju Saddle—Baju a Non-walker—Our ride to the Tampasuk—Gigantic Mango Trees—The Datu's House—Its Arrangements—The Datu and his People—Piratical Expedition—A Bride put up to Auction—The Baju—Mixed Breeds—Quarrels with the Lanuns—Effect of stealing Ida'an Children—Fable of



the Horse and his Rider—Amount of Fighting Men—Freedom of the Women—Killing the Fatted Calf—Beautiful Prospect—A new Gardinia—Pony Travelling—Difficulty of procuring Useful Men—Start—An Extensive Prospect—Cocoa-nuts and their Milk—A View of Kina Balu—Granite Débris—Our Guides—Natives Ploughing—Our Hut—Division of Land—Ghinambur—Neatest Village-house in the Country—Its Inhabitants—Tattooing—Curiosity—Blistered Feet—Batong—Granite Boulders—Fording—Fish-traps—Tambatuan—Robbing a Hive—Search for the Youth-restoring Tree—Our Motives—Appearance of the Summit of Kina Balu—A long Story—Swimming the River—Koung—Palms not plentiful—Lanun Cloth—Cotton—Nominal Wars—The Kiladi—Attempt to levy Black-mail at the Village of Labang Labang—Resistance—Reasons for demanding it—Bamboo flat-roofed Huts—Ingenious Contrivance—Kiau—Dirty Tribe—Recognition of Voice—A Quarrel—Breaking the Barometer—Opposition to the Ascent of Kina Balu—Harmless Demonstration—Thieves—Mr. Low unable to walk—Continue the Expedition alone—Cascade—Prayers to the Spirit of the Mountain—Flowers and Plants—Beautiful Rhododendrons—Cave—Unskilful Use of the Blow-pipe—Cold—Ascent to the Summit—Granite Face—Low's Gully—Noble Terrace—Southern Peak—Effect of the Air—The Craggy Summit—Distant Mountain—Dangerous Slopes—Ghostly Inhabitants—Mist—Superstitious—Collecting Plants—Descent—Noble Landscape—Difficult Path—Exhaustion—Mr. Low not recovered—Disagreeable Villagers—Recovering the Brass Wire—Clothing—Distrust—A lively Scene—Our Men behave well—Return on Rafts to the Datu's House.

## CHAPTER IX.

	PAGE
SECOND ASCENT OF KINA BALU . . . . .	291

Cholera in Brunei—The Phantom Ship—Start from Labuan—Coal Seams—View of Tanjong Kubong—Method of working the Coal—Red Land—Method of cultivating Pepper—Wild Cattle—The Pinnacle—Kimanis Bay—Inland Passage—Kimanis River—Cassia—Trade in it stopped—Smooth River—My first View of Kina Balu—Story of the Death of Pangeran Usup—Anchor—Papar—A Squall—Reach Gaya Bay—Noble Harbour—Pangeran Madoud—My first Visits to him—Method of making Salt—Village of Menggatal—Ida'an—His Fear of them—Roman Catholic Mission—Cholera—Mengkabong—Manilla Captives—The Salt-water Lake—Head-quarters of the Bajus—Their Enterprise—Find stranded Vessels—Tripod Masts—Unreasoning Retaliation—Energy of M. Cuarteron—Lawlessness of the Bajus—Pangeran Duroup, the Governor—Origin of the Bajus—Welcome by Pangeran Sirail—Love of Whiskey overcomes Prejudice—Night Weeping—A Market—The Chief of Tamparuli—The Pangeran's Enthusiasm—Path to the Tawaran—Fine Scene—Fruit Groves—Neat Gardens—The Tawaran—Sacred Jars—The Talking Jar—Attempted Explanation—Efficacy of the Water—Carletti's Account—Fabulous Value—The loveliest Girl in Borneo—No Rice—Advance to Bawang—Our Guides—Steep Hill—Extensive View—Si Nilau—Unceremonious Entry into a House—The Nilau Tribe—Kalawat Village—Tiring Walk—Desertion of a Negro—Numerous Villages—Bungol Village large—Deceived by the Guide—Fatiguing Walk—Koung Village—Black Mail—Explanation—Friendly Relations established—Labang Labang Village—Change of Treatment—Kiau Village—Warm Reception—Houses—No Rice—Confidence.

## CHAPTER X.

SECOND ASCENT OF KINA BALU—(Continued)	PAGE
	322

Return of the Men for Rice—Readiness to assist us—New Kinds of Pitcher Plants—The Valley of Pinokok—Beautiful *Nepenthes*—Kina Taki—Description of the *Nepenthes Rajah*—Rocks coated with Iron—Steep Strata—The Magnolia—Magnificent Sunset Scene—Fine Soil—Talk about the Lake—Change of Fashions—Effect of Example—Rapid Tailoring—Language the same among Ida'an, Dusun, and Bisaya—Reports—Start for Marci Parei—The Fop Kamá—Prepare Night Lodgings—Fragrant Bed—Stunted Vegetation—Appearance of Precipices—Dr. Hooker—Botanical Descriptions—*Nepenthes Rajah*—Manner of Growing—Great Size—Used as a Bucket—Drowned Rat—*Nepenthes Edwardsiana*—An Account of it—Beautiful Plants—Botanical Description of *Nepenthes Edwardsiana*—Extensive Prospects—Peaked Hill of Saduk Saduk—Noble Buttress—Situation for Barracks—Nourishing Food—Deep Valleys—Familiar Intercourse with the Villagers—Turning the Laugh—Dirty Faces—Looking-glasses—Their Effect—Return of our Followers—Start for the Mountain—Rough Cultivation—The Mountain Rat used as Food—Our Old Guides—Difficult Walking—Scarlet Rhododendron—Encamp—Double Sunset—*Nepenthes Lowii*—Botanical Description—*Nepenthes Villosa*—Botanical Description—Extensive View of the Interior of Borneo—The Lake—The Cave—Ascend to the Summit—Its Extent and Peculiarities—Distant Views—North-western Peak—Severe Storm—Injured Barometer—Useless Thermometers—Dangerous Descent—Accidents—Quartz in Crevices—Clean and Pleasant Girls—Friendly Parting—Ida'an Sacrifices—Return by Koung—Kalawat and Nili—Death of Sahat—A Thief—Cholera—Incantations and Method of Treatment—Arrival at Gantisan—Fine Wharf—The Pangeran—Bad Weather—Heavy Squall—Little Rice to be had—Sail—Anchor at Gaya Island—Curious Stones—Fish—Poisonous Fins—Set Sail—Awkward Position—Waterspout—Admiralty Charts—Names require Correcting—Serious Mistake—Among the Shoals—Fearful Squall—Falling Stars and Brilliant Meteor—Arrival at Labuan.

## CHAPTER XI.

THE PHYSICAL AND POLITICAL GEOGRAPHY OF THE DISTRICTS LYING BETWEEN GAYA BAY AND THE TAMPASUK RIVER; WITH A GEOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF MALUDU BAY AND THE NORTH-EAST COAST OF BORNEO	362
---	-----

The Coast Line—The Rivers—The Bays—Gaya Bay—Abai—Character of Interior Country—Plains—Hills—Kina Balu—First Ascent by Mr. Low—Description of Summit—The Peaks—The Northern Ranges—Steep Granite Slopes—The Spurs—The Main spur—Interior Country—Distant Mountains—Plain—Villages—The Lake—Vegetation on Kina Balu—The Rivers—The Ananam—The Kabatuan—The Mengkabong—The Tawaran—The Abai—The Tampasuk—Its Interior—Political Geography—Inhabitants—The Lanuns—The Bajus—Mohamedans—Appearance—Their Women—Their Houses—Love of Cockfighting—Fine Breed of Fowls—Other Inhabitants—The Ida'an—Their Houses—Their Women—Tattooing—Comfortable House—Method of Government—No Wars—Aborigines Honest—Exceptions—Agriculture—

Ploughing—Remnant of Chinese Civilization—Tobacco—Cotton—Good Soil—Amount of Population—Numerous and Extensive Villages—The Tampasuk—The Tawaran—Mengkabong—Other Districts—Enumeration—Manufactures—Lanun Cloths—Trade—Difficult Travelling—Languages—Geology—Sandstone—Greenstone—Climate of Kina Balu temperate—Map—Addition—Maludu Bay—Western Point—Western Shore—Mountains—Head of Bay—Population—Accounts compared—Bengkoka—Minerals—Eastern Point—Banguey—Difficult Navigation—Small Rivers and Bays—Paitan—Sugut—Low Coast—Labuk Bay—High Land—Benggaya—Labuk—Sandakan—Story of the Atas Man—Kina Ratangan—Cape Unsang—Tungku—Population—The Ida'an—The Mohamedans.

---

### LISTS OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

I. Kina Balu from the Lower Tampasuk . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
II. The Sea Dayaks . . . . .	<i>To face page 5</i>
III. City of Brunei. Sunset . . . . .	100
IV. The Land Dayaks . . . . .	135
V. View from near the Rajah's Cottage . . . . .	166
VI. Nepenthes Rajah . . . . .	324
VII. Kina Balu from the Pinokok Valley . . . . .	326
VIII. Nepenthes Edwardsiana . . . . .	335
IX. Nepenthes Lowii . . . . .	343
X. Nepenthes Villosa . . . . .	344

### MAPS.

I. Map of North-West Coast of Borneo . . .	<i>To face page 1</i>
II. Map of Districts near Kina Balu . . . . .	240





LIFE IN THE  
FORESTS OF THE FAR EAST;  
OR  
TRAVELS IN NORTHERN BORNEO.

---

INTRODUCTION.

---

BORNEO, one of the most interesting and romantic regions in the world, remains to this day comparatively unexplored; so that when we trace on the map the regions which have been already visited, we still find the greater part as yet untrodden by the European. I have myself, perhaps, penetrated farther into the interior of its Northern division than any previous traveller, and have visited and examined a greater number of districts. I therefore, on my return to England, determined to lay my experience before the public, believing I could impart more accurate and varied information than had yet appeared. I have treated only of those parts of Borneo of which I have personal knowledge, and have, therefore, principally

confined myself to the countries lying between the frontiers of Sambas and the Sulu Seas.

It will not, perhaps, be thought unnecessary for me to explain how I was enabled to travel so much in the Eastern Archipelago.

In January, 1848, I was appointed secretary to Sir James Brooke, who at that time held the office of Commissioner and Consul-General in Borneo, and sailed with him for the East in H.M.S. *M wander*, under the command of the present Admiral Sir Henry Keppell. Having resided a few months in Singapore we proceeded to Sarawak, and afterwards continued our course to the newly-established colony of Labuan, of which my chief had been appointed Governor; from thence we went over to Brunei to ratify the British treaty with the Sultan of that kingdom.

In December of the same year we visited the Sulu Archipelago, and reached Mindanau, in the Southern Philippines. The principal portion of 1849 was employed in the suppression of piracy, although we found time to proceed again to Sulu and conclude a treaty with the Sultan of that island.

In 1850, Sir James Brooke, having been appointed envoy to Siam, I accompanied him as secretary to that mission. In January, 1851, I was intrusted with the duties of Commissioner, and continued to hold that post till August, 1855, when I received my commission as Consul-General in Borneo. During that time, I was enabled to visit a great portion of the north-west shores, and extend my inquiries far down the north-east coast. I also ascended most of the principal rivers, as the Sarawak, the Samarahan, the Sadong,

the Batang Lupar, the Seribas, the Rejang, and the Baram.

In 1856 I took up my residence in Brunei, and commenced a series of expeditions which added much to my knowledge of the country. My appointment, in May, 1861, as *Chargé d’Affaires* to the Republic of Hayti, prevented my carrying out the scheme of penetrating across the island to the east coast, from the accomplishing of which I had been hitherto prevented by financial considerations.

I will now explain the plan of the following work, and endeavour to render it clear to the reader. The public is tolerably well aware that Sir James Brooke is Rajah or Ruler of Sarawak, a territory which has a coast line of about 300 miles. While I was secretary to him as Commissioner, my chief residence was at Kuching; and on my receiving the appointment to act for him during his absence I continued to live there. My first exploring journeys were, on that account, made from the capital, and were generally in company with Mr. Brooke, Sir James Brooke’s nephew, who had been left in charge of the government.

Upon the rajah’s departure for England, Mr. Brooke’s first object was to make himself practically acquainted with the country over which he now had charge, and 1851 was devoted to journeys among the Sea Dayaks, and the next year to making himself acquainted with the Land Dayaks. Mr. Brooke having invited me to accompany him on these official tours, I gladly assented, and knowing how much that was novel would be presented to my view, endeavoured to keep a full and accurate journal.

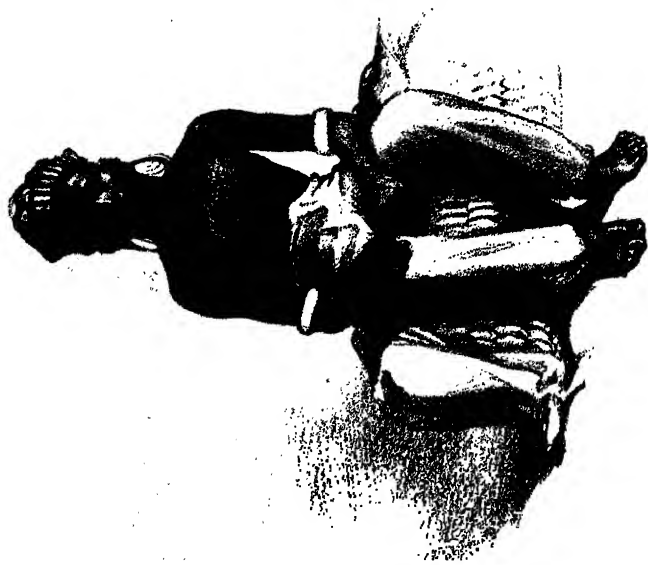


We commenced by a visit to Lundu, the most westerly district of Sarawak, chiefly inhabited by Sea Dayaks. The original habitat of these people is said by themselves to have been in the eastern portion of the island ; but many generations ago they commenced moving westward, until they occupied the districts in the interior of the Seribas and Batang Lupar, and extended on one side to some of the tributaries of the Rejang, and on the other to the little river of Sibuyau. An examination of the map which accompanies this volume will show the positions occupied by the Sea Dayaks. Perhaps, fifty years ago, these people were first employed in warfare by the Malays who inhabited the towns on the banks of the rivers within the influence of the tides. Soon learning their strength, through their superiority of numbers, the Dayaks began to frequent the sea on their own account, and became habitual marauders. Those of their countrymen who had established themselves on the Sibuyau, not joining in their piratical expeditions, were exposed to attack, and, after bravely endeavouring to hold their own in their adopted country, fled, some to the river Sadong, others to the Samarahan and Sarawak, while a numerous body proceeded as far as the Lundu ; and it was to this branch of the Sea Dayaks that we paid our first visit.

The word Sea Dayak, a term applied to them by the Malays, merely suggests the idea that these people frequent the ocean, though they live as far in the interior as any of the Land Dayaks.

On leaving the Lundu we directed our course to the eastward, until we reached the Batang Lupar river,





whose main stream and tributaries are occupied by various branches of the great tribe of Sea Dayaks. We first reached the Lingga, and then proceeded on to the Sakarang, passing the Undup on our right. The population is very numerous ; but, though they are all of one race, they still varied from each other in their ways. Some communities, as the Sakarangs, were desperate pirates and head-hunters, while the Linggas never joined in these marauding expeditions, but suffered repeatedly from the attacks of their neighbours.

The Sea Dayaks are a very improvable people, and I have little doubt, should the present government be enabled to continue its wise and beneficent rule, will advance rapidly in civilization and become an intelligent and productive agricultural community.

Leaving the entrance of the Batang Lupar we steered in a N. N. E. direction, passing the mouths of the Seribas and Kalaka, till we reached the Rejang and followed the course of that stream to the Kanowit. Here we found a tattooed tribe very different from the Sea Dayaks, who inhabit the Kanowit and Katibas branches of the main stream.

The Rejang is a remarkably interesting river in every respect ; its great size and depth, and the distance it penetrates into the interior, render it politically and geographically of the greatest importance. To the ethnological student also it presents several curious people, whose habits and customs have yet to be studied. On the mouths of this river dwell the Milanaus, of whose peculiarities we know little, as a passing traveller can but mark the outward and more distinctive features. However, there is a hope that we

may soon learn more concerning them, as every one of their communities is now subject to the government of Sarawak, and an able man, Mr. Hay, has been appointed resident over them.

The Milanaus occupy the mouths, as I have said, and a singular people, called the Kayans, dwell in the far interior; but half way between them live the small tribe of Kanowits, who appear to have borrowed their customs from both their neighbours. The men tatoo like the Kayans, but carry it to a far greater extent, while the women dress like the Milanaus; they follow the customs of burial prevalent among the latter, while they hunt for heads like the former.

Not to break the continuity of the narrative, I have collected the information respecting the manners and customs of these people into one chapter, under the head of "Social Life of the Sea Dayaks."

My next journey was made among the Kayans, a people who always greatly excited my curiosity. They also came from the east, and have now forced their way across to the western coast a little northward of the Sea Dayaks, but fortunately have not yet learnt to frequent the sea in the same troublesome manner; and as their two principal outlets to the ocean are now in the possession of the Sarawak Government, it is probable they will have to confine their energies to inland expeditions, and not follow the example of their brethren on the eastern coast, who have commenced ravaging the neighbourhood of the Tidong.

The Kayans have occupied the interiors of the rivers Baram, Bintulu, and Rejang, and extend right across the island to the Koti and the Tidong on the eastern

coast ; though other tribes more resembling the Muruts of the interior of Brunei occupy many of the rivers, as the Balungan and Gunong Tabur. The Kayans are an active, restless race, who, by their numerous successful expeditions, have inspired the greatest terror in their neighbours : their mission, however, is not to improve but to desolate, and their passion for head-hunting and slaves is ruining all the districts within their reach. An examination of the map will show that they are gradually creating a desert around them, as looking north there is now scarcely an inhabitant between their town of Langusin on the Baram, and a village about thirty miles south of Brunei ; to the east their ravages have been equally deplorable, and the country as far as the mountains of Lawi is depopulated ; and yet I am satisfied from the inquiries and the examination I made that these districts were once thickly peopled, as there is little but young jungle to be seen, which has grown up on the sites of the old plantations.

It was, therefore, with the greatest satisfaction I learnt that the Sultan of Brunei had ceded to the Rajah of Sarawak the whole of the territories lying between the Rejang and the Bintulu. Though the Kayans had seldom disturbed those districts, yet they could never improve while subject to a continual fear of their neighbours ; but now that they are under a Government able and willing to protect its subjects, their progress will be rapid. The Kayans, as an attacking people, are only formidable to the scattered villagers who have no combination, and who are generally surprised and overwhelmed by numbers.

The Brunei Government, instead of checking the advance of these marauders, has of late years rather encouraged them as a means of keeping its own oppressed and discontented subjects in subjection.

I have described my visit to the river Baram and my intercourse with this peculiar people, but my stay was too short to enable me to do more than observe their marked peculiarities, and their lively and energetic character. Yet I was pleased with what I saw, and only regretted that their energies could not be turned into a better channel, than seeking the heads of their unoffending neighbours.

The people of Baram have always professed the most lively desire to be on the best terms with the English; their chiefs have visited our colony of Labuan, have taken passages in our steam men-of-war, and have been treated by us with kindness and consideration. I have great hopes that when their brethren who reside on the Bintulu and Rejang become equally well acquainted with the Sarawak officials, as kindly an intercourse may ultimately arise, though no savage people are good neighbours until they know it is dangerous to be otherwise. The Kayans of Baram are fortunately too far from Labuan to be troublesome.

I have devoted the next four chapters to the Land Dayaks, who reside in the interior of the rivers Lundu, Sarawak, Samarahan, and Sadong. They are exclusively an agricultural people, and rarely even visit the sea-coast. They do not understand the management of any but small river canoes, and have therefore never been guilty of piracy. Even their inland expe-

ditions have been rare, and always conducted on the smallest scale. There can be no doubt that they are a duller people than the Sea Dayaks, whose intellects have been sharpened by a mode of life in which quickness of perception and action are necessary to success. I have entered minutely into their manners and customs, which are singularly new and strange, and have devoted considerable space, in my chapters on the social life of the Dayaks, to the question of their religious belief. I am convinced that they have an idea of a supreme Being who is superior to all, and my opinion is shared by those who have had the longest intercourse with them.

The first journey I made among the Land Dayaks was up the left-hand branch of the Sarawak river, which presents as beautiful scenery and picturesque spots as any in Borneo, and there we were received with an exuberance of joy that almost became fatiguing. Among the limestone mountains the soil appears to possess great fertility, and may yet present to the traveller's eye other tints than those of the jungle.

I also made many journeys up the right-hand branch of the Sarawak from the same starting-point, and also to the neighbouring river of Samarahan, where we explored some fine caves. I have only described one journey to each place, but my knowledge of the manners and customs of the inhabitants was acquired during a familiar intercourse of many years.

In 1856 I left Sarawak, and did not return there again, except as a temporary visitor; but living in Brunei, the Sultan's capital, I determined to explore the country around, and make myself as familiar as



possible with that portion of Northern Borneo. I have described minutely three of the most important journeys I undertook ; two to ascend the great mountain of Kina Balu, the loftiest height at present known in Borneo, and the third far away into the hidden recesses of the interior.

To ascend Kina Balu has, no doubt, been the desire of most of those who have looked at its noble proportions. Seen from the north, no grander effect can be conceived, as it rises sheer out of the plain, and sweeps aloft till it attains the towering height of nearly fourteen thousand feet. Its grand precipices, its polished granite surfaces glittering under the bright tropical rays, the dashing cascades, which fall from so great a height as to dissolve in spray before being lost in the dark valleys below, have a magical effect upon the imagination, and I felt a longing scarcely to be conceived to explore its unknown beauties. No amount of fatigue, no suffering, no opposition could stop us when once we started from the coast ; and the first time I reached the summit, it was with feet that left a red tinge on the rocks at every step ; but all this was unnoticed as I viewed the grandeur of the scene around, the lofty peaks of every varied form, the magnificent slopes of apparently polished granite, the broad terraces, the cyclopean walls fringing the giddy precipices, the chasms whose depths even the eye could not reach. There was nothing, however, that stopped our onward march, and no rest was sought until we reached the solitary southern peak, and I had climbed to its very pinnacle and rested on a spot not a yard in breadth. Then, and only

then, did the glow of triumph mantle in my cheeks, as my eye rested with satisfaction on the vast panorama spread out below. Unfortunately misty clouds swept round the mountain, obscuring the splendour of the scene; but they lent a powerful aid to the imagination, as through the rents in the fleecy curtain, rivers, mountains, and villages, were now visible, now hidden. And there, in the distance, high above all, with nothing but the thin air between, rose a lofty peak, so lofty, that it was impossible to estimate its height or distance. In that rarified air, remote objects appear near, and the voice, without an effort, can be heard through a space which, on the plains below, it could not penetrate.

I had never before reached to so great a height, never before had I seen such flowers, so brilliant and so numerous; there were rhododendrons of the brightest scarlet, or blood-colour, or rosy pink, in bunches of forty blossoms, covering trees twenty feet in height. And not single trees, but masses of rhododendrons in the sheltered nooks, literally bending beneath the weight of their flowers. And how marvellous were the shapes of the nepenthes, how beautiful in colour, how delicate in form!

Our second expedition to Kina Balu was better organized, and we endured no unusual discomfort. We saw more of the country, obtained better information, and though my extreme excitement had left me, yet I enjoyed this journey greatly. My companion, Mr. Low, was one with whom it is a pleasure to travel. In my minute descriptions, I have noted down everything I observed which appeared new or

worthy of record, but I have not attempted to give any chapter on the social life of the Ida'an, as our opportunities were not such as to warrant the attempt. In Sarawak I lived for years in daily intercourse with the people, while in the neighbourhood of Kina Balu we spent little more than two months.

Under the head of my Limbang Journal, I have described a long exploring journey I made to the southward and eastward of the capital. I had no civilized companion to share the dangers and the pleasures, but pursued my onward course, followed by a trusty party of retainers. I have scarcely dwelt on the difficulties of that journey, as their repetition would have become wearisome, but I believe my men did as much as could be expected of men, and, with rare exceptions, considering the privations, bore the fatigue and perils of the journey with exemplary fortitude. The results of that expedition fully rewarded me in the knowledge I obtained of the interior, of its mountain system, and of the lives led by the inhabitants. I learnt more in that expedition of the method of organizing men than I had done before, and I felt satisfied that had I had the opportunity, I could have led an exploring party to the east coast with comparatively little danger.

I have introduced the accounts of two voyages to the Sulu Archipelago, as those islands are some of the most lovely in the world, though it is, indeed, a subject of regret that their inhabitants should be so lawless. The Sultan of Sulu, under British surveillance, judiciously exercised, might have greatly improved the condition of his territories and restrained

those of his subjects who were inclined to fit out piratical squadrons; but unfortunately we were unable to afford him any assistance, and the destruction of his capital by the Spaniards, and his flight to the mountains, having removed even the shadow of authority, his subjects now give themselves up to piracy, or hold intercourse with the marauders, without any attempt on his part to check the practice.

Piracy seems for centuries to have held sway in the Sulu Archipelago, and appears to have arisen partly from the decay of ancient native governments, and partly from the contempt in which all who are not Mohamedans are held by the native chiefs. A noble in a well-armed boat, surrounded by a crew of bold unprincipled men, would seldom hesitate to plunder the vessels of those who were weaker than himself, and the practice, fostered by impunity, has grown into a system. There were at one time two well-fortified isles in the Sulu Seas, called Tongkil and Balignini, which were entirely inhabited by pirates, whose numbers could be reckoned by thousands. They cruised in well-armed vessels quite capable of coping with the Spanish rowing gunboats which vainly attempted to protect the coasts of the Philippines. No pirates seek a fight, but endeavour, on every occasion, to avoid an encounter, and, by the superior swiftness of their vessels, which are double banked and of a third greater speed than their pursuers, generally succeed. The mischief they did was incalculable; they destroyed more than they used, and yearly captured hundreds of unfortunate Spanish subjects who, to this day, are to be found as slaves in all the countries lying south of

the Philippines. At last the attention of the Spanish Government was fully aroused, and, in 1848, they attacked the two strongholds of the Balignini and captured them. This vigorous act, and the spirited action of the *Nemesis* off Brunei, in 1847, startled the pirates, and those who escaped scattered over the islands of the Sulu Archipelago. Little was heard of piracy during the three following years, as steamers were cruising in all directions, and the marauders feared to venture to sea in great bodies. Then came the attack of the Spaniards on Sulu, in 1851, which, by breaking up that government, sent hundreds of chiefs and wild spirits to seek a living elsewhere. Many of these established villages, which were soon recruited by the fugitives from the pirate islands, and by degrees the curse of those lovely seas again reared its head. The Lanun communities on the coasts of Borneo, awed for a time into peaceful habits, once more burst forth, until at last no sea or strait is free from this scourge.

The year 1862 has been especially marked by the endless number of pirate squadrons which have swept the seas. The Dutch have been in active pursuit, and have had some success, but the most brilliant action was that of the Sarawak Government steamer *Rainbow*, under the personal superintendence of Mr. Brooke, the Rajah Muda of Sarawak. The steamer was very efficiently handled by commander Hewatt, and the result was the destruction of six formidable pirate vessels, with their piratical crews, and the release of about two hundred captives, a hundred and sixty of whom were Dutch subjects. The latter were fed, clothed, and, when the wounded were in a fit state to

be moved, were forwarded to the nearest Dutch port at the expense of the Sarawak Government, yet not a word of acknowledgment or thanks has been tendered to the Rajah Muda, who was in personal command of the expedition, and under whose directions every assistance was afforded to the captives. I feel assured that the Netherlands Government would regret that such ingratitude should be shown by their authorities in the East, and if the matter were properly represented would remove this stain from them.\*

In the endeavour to repress piracy, great care should be shown not to molest lawful trade; but this is not sufficiently attended to by the petty Dutch authorities in remote parts. It is almost impossible to conceive that such acts as the following could be committed by officers whose first duty should be to endeavour to encourage native traders and foster every new branch of commerce.

A Sarawak merchant took a pass for the Dutch island of Banca, and sailed for that place. He was well armed, as the pirates were reported to be cruising along the shores of Borneo; on touching at the first Dutch settlement a pass was given him and he proceeded to his destination, which was the town of Mintoh. On his arrival he was boarded by some men from a Dutch ship-of-war, seized, taken on shore, and after the examination of his Dutch pass was sent to prison. In the meantime, his vessel was searched, and the sails, arms and oars carried off. After six days the damaged things were returned, and he went on

\* A full account of this action was given by the Bishop of Labuan, in a letter to the *Times* of July 16th, 1862.

board, without any cause being assigned for this arbitrary act. It is perfectly impossible that the Dutch officers could have mistaken a Sarawak vessel for a Lanun pirate boat, which is as different as a smart man-of-war from a clumsy trader. The fact is, that these officials are not sufficiently superintended, and ruin the Dutch name to gratify their love of showing authority. By this act they have effectually stopped the trade between Sarawak and the ports of Banca.

Sir James Brooke, who is without exception the highest authority on matters relating to the present condition of the independent states of the Eastern Archipelago, has pointed out the best, indeed the only effectual method of suppressing piracy. Cruising will check, but will never eradicate the evil. Except when caught out at sea, the pirate vessels can generally escape over shallows or up creeks where no steamer can follow. It is, therefore, imperatively necessary to track the pirates to their homes, and punish them there, making them feel in their own persons and property the losses they are so ready to inflict on others. It must always be borne in mind that pirate communities are likewise in most cases industrious agriculturists; as the mass of the population—the women and children, great bodies of slaves, and a sufficient number of men to guard the river from hostile attack—always stay at home. These employ themselves in tilling the fields, and some of the most luxuriant crops of rice I have seen in Borneo were at the pirate settlement of Tungku. If it became known that the British Government was determined to punish those communities who permit pirate squadrons to equip in their

ports, and commence by inflicting summary chastisement on the most guilty, the peaceful portion of the men and all the women and children would be interested in preventing the departure of their unruly spirits. There are a few villages entirely devoted to piracy, but many others which only furnish an occasional vessel to swell the piratical fleets.

Were a political officer, thoroughly conversant with the native languages and the character of the people, appointed to superintend the suppression of piracy, the evil might be checked in one season, and probably eradicated in two or three. The spots where the pirate settlements exist are well known, and a judicious officer would have little difficulty in obtaining the best information.

I have dwelt on this subject at some length, as it is impossible to expect that the resources of Borneo and the neighbouring islands can be properly developed, while the seas continue dangerous to the peaceful trader.

I have devoted a separate chapter to some anecdotes of animals, as, interspersed through the accounts of my expeditions, I found they broke up the narrative. The orang-utan, from certain resemblances to man, has always formed a very interesting object of study; and the assertion so constantly repeated by the aborigines that young ones have been born from the intercourse of the monkey with the human being, though resting on stories current in many communities, has, of course, no scientific value, but is still worthy of some attention, and should lead those who live in the countries which the orang-utan frequents to make careful inquiries



into the origin of these narratives. I have given one anecdote as I heard it, and the reader must judge for himself.

I have not attempted to give an account of all the animals which abound in the woods of Borneo, but have singled out a few that I have myself often observed. There is a beautiful beast there whose skin I have seen, but which I have not met with in the jungle; it is called by the Malays the tiger of the branches, or the tree tiger; its skin is sufficiently large to make a fighting jacket for a man, and its fangs are often two inches in length; it lives entirely in the trees, and from thence springs down on its prey with incredible activity and again bounds aloft with its victim in its mouth; at night we have often heard it moaning round our tents.

The principal animals in Borneo are the elephant in a few districts, the rhinoceros in the most deserted spots, wild cattle, bears, the tiger cats, deer, and swine. The tapir is reported, but its body has not yet been brought in. Among the most formidable reptiles are the alligator, the monstrous python, and the deadly cobra. Some of the birds are of great beauty, as the argus pheasant and the kingfisher, while the sea yields fish whose gorgeous colours rival those of the rainbow.

Brunei, the capital of Borneo Proper, and the residence of the Sultan, claimed a careful chapter, as I resided there many years, and was familiar with the manners and customs of its inhabitants. It will be found a curious picture of one of the few native courts which continue to exist in the Eastern Archipelago.

The picture, however, is not an inviting one, and I cannot help feeling that any change must be for the better. The government of the Sultan and his ministers is hopelessly corrupt, and no good can possibly arise from their rule. Yet it is necessary that these facts should be known when talking of that wretched phantom, the Brunei Government. The nobles of the capital are the most useless race that ever encumbered the earth; useless I mean in their present position, for in other parts of the country, when subject to the government of Englishmen, some have behaved well. They are idle, luxurious, oppressors of their subjects, so sunk in sloth as to be unable to strike a blow to save the neighbouring districts from devastation by the Kayans—clothed in ridiculous pride, believing, yes still believing, in the grandeur of their country, one can scarcely imagine a more forlorn picture of departed greatness.

Yet these nobles have a bright side to those who know them intimately, they are polished gentlemen in manner, and have a complete control of their words and actions, and, on the whole, I must confess they treated me personally with considerate kindness, and with a courtesy and respect which I could not fail to appreciate.

Opposite to the entrance of the Limbang Bay, into which the Brunei pours its waters, lies the little island of Labuan, for the last fifteen years a British colony. The great hopes which were formed of its prosperity have not been realized, yet it has done much good, and when the coal mines are fairly worked, will be found of the greatest advantage to

England. It commands the China Seas, and will prove a port of refuge from an enemy, while the possession of coal will, in time of warfare, render a naval station there a matter of necessity. For any effort we may make to suppress piracy, Labuan will be necessarily the base of operations, and the more the advantages of its position are studied, the greater will they appear. I believe it has seen its most evil days, and that a marked improvement is already taking place.

It is a pleasure to turn from the consideration of the decaying kingdom of Brunei, to the prosperous state of Sarawak. Twenty-five years ago this portion of Borneo was in a worse condition than the capital, as the pirates rendered even the inland towns and villages insecure, and swept the seas in resistless numbers. When Sir James Brooke first reached Sarawak, the country was devastated by a hopeless civil war, the Dayaks were in a starving condition, the blackened ruins of villages saddened the scene, and strings of female captives and the bleeding heads of their fathers, husbands and brothers, were continually being carried off by the indefatigable Dayaks of Seribas and Sakarang. It appeared as if the whole district had been doomed to destruction, when a spark of western civilization came to illuminate this gloomy picture. Confidence was soon restored, as in the touching words of a native chief, "They had heard, the whole world had heard, that the son of Europe was the friend of the Dayak."

The struggle with evil was difficult and dangerous, but when every energy of an enthusiastic mind is

devoted to a noble object, it rarely fails to succeed, and in this instance a marvellous result has followed. A country oppressed with evils, which to be understood by those at home must be compared to the condition of the Saxons in England during the worst period of the ravaging of the Danes—that such a state of society could have existed five-and-twenty years ago in a country which is now the best governed, the most peaceful and the most flourishing in the Archipelago—may be regarded as marvellous.

To discover how this result was brought about is really worthy an attentive study. I am convinced that the real secret was in treating the natives as equals, and believing that in everything but education they were so. Sir James Brooke had never any military force to support his authority but such as the natives themselves afforded him ; yet by freely associating their chiefs in the government, he has erected a state which is expanding and gradually becoming more powerful.

He has trained up a body of English and native officers, who have worthily supported his authority and enabled him to carry on his government with increasing efficiency. To ensure them the means, however, properly to develop the country, Sarawak should be acknowledged and placed under the protection of some great power. England alone can worthily fulfill all the duties of a protecting State. She has a noble fleet in those seas, and her name is a tower of strength. Her prestige is great, she has never sullied it by any ignoble act, and she is respected and trusted by the natives. The conquest of Java has

left an impress on the minds of all, and her rule is to this day regretted. For, whatever may have been her short-comings, the object of England has been noble ; it has been to govern for the good of the natives, and not for the profit to be squeezed from an oppressed people.

I have lived in Borneo till it appears more familiar to me than the life in England. I have had the best opportunities of becoming acquainted with the condition of the country, and of studying the government carried on in Sarawak ; and I can deliberately assure my countrymen, that to stretch out a helping hand to those of our brethren who are gallantly and worthily sustaining the good name of Englishmen in Borneo would be an act productive only of good. What is wanted is, that England should acknowledge the Government of Sarawak, and that an English man-of-war should protect the coasts, until measures can be taken to root out the piratical system. All this could be done without any appreciable cost to England.

I wish it had been in my power to give a cheerful account of the prospects of the Protestant mission in Sarawak. There never was a better field opened up for the purpose, as the Dayaks, having an intense respect for Englishmen, receive the ministers of their religion with pleasure, and listen to their teaching with deference.

I must request the reader to study with me the map of Northern Borneo, which faces the first page of this volume. At the extreme west he will notice Api point, which is situated in the Dutch territory of Sambas. The next name is Cape Datu, where commences the

Sarawak territory, and the dotted line marks its inland boundaries. Proceeding along the shore, we reach the Lundu, the first district to which we proceeded in order to visit the Sea Dayaks; then comes the Santubong entrance of the Sarawak; and, following the coast, we reach the Muaratabas entrance of the same river, and afterwards the Samarahan and the Sadong. The interior of these rivers, I have stated are the habitat of the Land Dayaks; continuing our course, we pass the Sibuyau, the Batang Lupar the Scribas, and the Kalaka. The interiors of all these rivers are inhabited by Sea Dayaks, but the mouths of all the rivers are in the hands of the Malays. Then follow the Rejang, the Palo, the Bruit, the Mato, the Egan, the Oyah, the Judan, the Muka, the Balinian, the Tatau, and the Bintulu. The mouths of most of these rivers are occupied by the Milanaus, while the interiors of the Rejang and Bintulu are in the possession of Kayans; I have before noticed that some of the tributaries of the Rejang, as the Kanowit, the Poè, and the Katibas, are inhabited by Sea Dayaks. Scattered in the interior of some of the smaller rivers are a few wandering tribes, called Punans and Pakatans, who live on the produce of the jungle, and seldom cultivate rice.

The extensive districts lying between Bintulu and the next great river Baram, can scarcely be said to be inhabited, as but a few even of the wandering tribes can be found there, while the far interior is thickly peopled by Kayans and the kindred tribes of Kineahs and Sububs. Passing the little river of Tutong, we come to Brunei, the capital; next the great river

of Limbang, and opposite will be seen our colony of Labuan. The inhabitants of the interior of these districts, as well as of those which stretch as far as the extreme north of Borneo, may be divided into two extensive tribes, the Bisayas and the Muruts; though the former, in the Northern districts, go by the name of Ida'an and Dusun, while the Muruts who have been converted to Mohamedanism are called Kadayans. The sea coasts of these districts are principally in the hands of the Malays as far as Gaya Bay, beyond which the Bajus and Lanuns obtain the mastery.

I think if the reader would carefully study the map, he would find but little difficulty in following me in the various journeys I undertook.

## CHAPTER I.

## THE SEA DAYAKS.

THE Sea Dayaks are so called from their familiarity with the sea, though many live as far inland as any of the other aborigines. They inhabit the districts lying to the eastward of Sadong, and extend along the coast to the great river of Rejang. They are the most numerous and warlike of the Dayaks, and the most powerful of their sections formerly indulged in the exciting pastimes of piracy and head-hunting. The next river to the east of Sadong is the Sibuyau, whose inhabitants, as I have explained in my introduction, were scattered and had fled to the districts around Sarawak.

The first village of these Sibuyaues, a branch of the Sea Dayaks, to whom Mr. Brooke and I paid a long visit, was situated on the Lundu, the most westerly river in the Sarawak territories.

We started from Kuching in March, and fell down the Sarawak river, passing out to sea by the Santubong entrance. The north-east monsoon still blowing occasionally, made it necessary to watch our time for venturing out, as otherwise the waves would soon have swamped our long native prahu.



From the Santubong entrance of the Sarawak to the Lundu, there are passages which run behind the jungle that skirts the sea-shore, enabling canoes to hold communication between those places thirty miles apart without venturing to sea; but our boat being fifty feet long was unable to pass at one place, so during a lull in the weather we pushed out, calling at the little island of Sampadien, where Mr. Crookshank, the able police magistrate, was preparing the ground for a cocoanut plantation. He brought us down a fine haunch of venison, covered with a layer of fat, a very rare thing in Borneo, where the deer generally are destitute of that sign of good condition. Being skilled in all the mysteries of wood-craft, he had employed himself the first few days in clearing the island of game, and his dogs had on the previous evening been fortunate enough to bring a fine animal to bay, when he speared it with his own hands.

Pushing off quickly, as the sea breeze was blowing in strongly, we sailed and pulled away for the river of Sampadien, and after a narrow escape from not hitting the right channel, found ourselves clear of the breakers and safe in still water. An inland passage then took us to the Lundu.

The banks of this river are very flat, and the plains extend for a considerable distance, but the scene is redeemed from tameness by the mountains of Gading and Poè. There is a flourishing appearance about the principal village, whose inhabitants were all engaged in some occupation. We were received by Kalong, the eldest son of the chief, who was himself absent collecting the fruit of the mèngekawan tree, from which a

good vegetable oil is extracted: the natives use it for candles and for cookery, but it is also exported in quantities to Europe.

The landing-place of the Sibuyau village is very picturesque, being overshadowed by a grove of magnificent palms, under which were drawn up the war-boats of the tribe. A passage raised on posts three feet above the ground, led to the great village-house, which extended far on either side, and was then hidden among the fruit-trees. It was the longest I had seen, measuring 534 feet, and contained nearly five hundred people. There are various lesser houses around of Malays and Dayaks, with a population of about a thousand. The Orang Kaya, or chief, lived in the largest house, which was certainly a remarkably fine one: the broad verandah, or common room, stretched uninterruptedly the whole length, and afforded ample space for the occupations of the tribe. The divisions appropriated to each family were comparatively large, and all had an air of comfort; while in front of the house were bamboq platforms, on which the rice is dried and beaten out.

No village in Sarawak is blessed with greater prosperity than this. The old chief, being of a most determined character, had reversed the usual order of things, and the Malays, instead of being the governors, were the governed. Having for years been little exposed to exactions, these Dayaks flourish and exhibit an air of great contentment. They made us comfortable in the long public room, and placed benches around a table for our accommodation, though I confess to preferring the clean matted floor. After

the first burst of curiosity was over, the people went on with their usual avocations.

About a mile from the village was a small colony of Chinese, who had come over from the Dutch territory of Sambas in search of a quiet home. We walked in the evening through their gardens, extending over about a hundred acres of ground, and neatly planted with various kinds of vegetables, among which beans and sweet potatoes appeared most numerous. There were here about two hundred Chinese, most of them but lately arrived, so that the cultivated ground was continually increasing. A large market was found for their sweet potatoes among the sago growers and workers of the rivers to the north.

Next day we started for a waterfall, which we were told was to be found on the sides of the Gading mountain, a few miles below the village. After leaving our boat, the path lay through a jungle of fruit-trees; but as we ascended the spur of the mountain these ceased. In about an hour we came to a very deep ravine, where the thundering noise of falling water gave notice of the presence of a cataract. This was by far the finest I had yet seen; the stream, tumbling down the sides of the mountain, forms a succession of noble falls: the first we saw dashed in broken masses over the rocks above, and then descended like a huge pillar of foam into a deep, gloomy basin, while on either side rose smooth rocks, crowned with lofty trees, and dense underwood, that threw their dark shadows into the pool.

A slight detour brought us to a spot above the cascade, and then we could perceive that it was but

the first of a succession. One view, where six hundred feet of fall was at once visible, is extremely fine: the water now gliding over the smoothest granite rock, then broken into foam by numerous obstructions, then tumbling in masses into deep basins,—the deafening roar, the noble trees rising amid the surrounding crags, the deep verdure, the brightness of the tropical sun, reflected from burning polished surfaces, then deep shade and cooling air. We ascended to the top of the mountain, though warned of the danger we incurred from a ferocious dragon which guarded the summit.

The Sibuyaus are only interlopers in the Lundu, as there is a tribe, the original inhabitants of the country, who still live there. One day we visited them.

After pulling a few miles up the river we reached a landing place, where the chief of the true Lundus was waiting to guide us to his village. For six or seven miles our path lay through the jungle over undulating ground, and we found the houses situated at the commencement of a great valley lying between the mountains of Poè and Gading. The soil is here excellent, but now little of it is tilled, though there are thousands of acres around that might support an immense population. Most of it, however, had, in former times, been cleared, as we saw but very little old forest.

The Lundu houses, on the top of a low hill, are but few in number, neat and new. The tribe however has fallen, and its members fear there is a curse on them. A thousand families, they say, once cultivated

this valley, but now they are reduced to ten, not by the ravages of war, but by diseases sent by the spirits. They complain bitterly that they have no families, that their women are not fertile, indeed, there were but three or four children in the whole place. The men were fine-looking, and the women well favoured and healthy—remarkably clean and free from skin diseases. We could only account for their decreasing numbers by their constant intermarriages, so we advised them to seek husbands and wives among the neighbouring tribes. Their village is on a well-drained, airy spot. 129

On our return, one of those sudden squalls came on which are so frequent in Borneo : we were among the decayed trees that still stood on the site of an old farm. As a heavier gust swept from the hills, the half-rotten timber tottered and fell with a crash around us, rendering our walk extremely dangerous. I was not sorry, therefore, to find myself in the boat on the broad river. The banks are tolerably well cleared by Chinese, Malays, Milanaus, and Dayaks. A few months later a sudden squall struck the British brig *Amelia*, and capsized her : ninety-three went down with her, but twenty escaped in the jolly-boat.

In the evening Kalong's wife was taken in the pains of child-birth. The Rev. F. McDougall, now Bishop of Labuan, offered his medical assistance, as it was evident the case was a serious one, but they preferred following their own customs. The child died, and we left the mother very ill.

A young girl, bitten by a snake, was brought in, and the wound was rubbed with a piece of deer's horn; she

became drowsy and slept for several hours, but in the morning was about her usual occupations.

After a few days passed at Lundu, we pulled down the river, and finding the weather calm determined to return by the open sea. The morning was bright, and showed us in all its perfection the lovely country skirting the shore between Datu and Sipang points. At first it appeared a confused mass of mountains, but the eye soon began to distinguish its varied features. The massive and lofty range of Poè bounded the scene to the westward, while the Matang occupied the centre of the picture, and the peak of Santubong and the Sipang hills completed it to the eastward. Between these are many lower ranges, and beyond could be seen various ridges and single mountains forming a background.

Though these high lands first attract the eye, yet it rests with greater pleasure on the beautiful valleys between, and none more beautiful than that at the foot of the Poè mountains, which stretches as far as the eye can reach, and imperceptibly mingles with the neighbouring hills. Taken as a whole, it is a very beautiful bay, and lovely are the isles scattered about it. Every traveller is enthusiastic about the appearance of these little gems, which rise verdant from the water's edge to the very summit; or rendered more bright by a narrow beach of shining yellow sand which skirts the shores.

A beautiful breeze wafted us softly along, and by evening we had reached the Santubong. We continued our course to our houses to pick up our home letters and newspapers, and having transferred the baggage to a larger prahu, very comfortably fitted up,

with a spacious cabin in the centre, continued our journey to the other entrance of the Sarawak, intending to proceed eastward to the country of the Sea Dayaks.

At the Muaratabas we joined the *Jolly Bachelor* pinnace, sending our boat on in shore. Setting sail with a fair breeze, we towards evening reached the embouchure of the Batang Lupa, which is marked by two conical hills—one the island of Trisau, in the centre of the river, the other on the right bank. The coast between the Sarawak and Sadong is very low, though distant mountains are clearly visible, but to the eastward of Sadong the coast becomes more bold, the mountains approaching nearer to the sea. During our passage we observed some of those floating islands which wander over the face of the waters, at the mercy of wind and wave. I remember once that the signal-man gave notice that a three-masted vessel was ahead, and as at sea the slightest incident awakens interest we all fixed our telescopes on her. As we steamed on our mistake was soon discovered; it was a floating island, with unusually tall nipa palms upon it, that were bending gracefully before the breeze.

Our people once found at sea a man making one of these his resting-place. Doubtless he abandoned his island home cheerfully, though he fell into the hands of enemies. He told us that his pirate companions, in hurried flight, had left him on the bank of a hostile river, and so seeing a diminutive island floating seaward he swam off, got upon it, and he had been there many days, living upon the fruit he had found on the palm stems.

The origin of the islands is this: a stream occasionally wears away its steep bank under the closely united roots of the nipa palm, and some sudden flood, pressing with unusual force on the loosened earth, tears away a large portion of the shore, which floats to the mouth of the river to be carried by the tides and currents far out to sea. Some fifteen miles off Baram Point, mariners tell of a great collection of floating trees and sea-weed, that forms an almost impassable barrier to ships in a light breeze. Some action of the current appears to cause this assemblage of floating timber always to keep near one spot, and to move with a gyrating motion.

The Batang Lupar is in breadth from two to three miles, and occasionally more: we never had a cast of less than three fathoms on the bar, and inside it deepens to six. The banks are low, composed entirely of alluvial soil, and covered everywhere with the thickest jungle. Wind and tide soon carried us to our night's resting-place at the mouth of the first tributary, the Lingga, some twenty miles from the *embouchure* of the Batang Lupar. It is small, and its banks have the usual flat appearance, relieved, however, by some distant hills and the mountain of Lesong (a mortar), from a fancied resemblance to that article to be seen in every Malay house.

We found our rowing-boat here, together with a large force from Sarawak. I had taken advantage of the chance to accompany Captain Brooke on one of those tours through the Sarawak territories to which I have referred in my introduction. This was to induce all branches of the Sea Dayaks to make peace with



each other, and with the towns on the coast, some of which they had so long harried.

While business detained the force at the mouth of the Lingga, I visited Banting, the chief town of the Balau Dayaks, about ten miles up that stream. There were here about thirty long village houses, half at the foot of a low hill, the others scattered on its face, completely embowered in fruit-trees. From the spot where Mr. Chambers, the missionary, has since built his house, there is a lovely view—more lovely to those who have long been accustomed to jungle than to others : for here we have the Lingga river meandering among what appear to be extensive green fields, reminding me of our lovely meadows at home. We must not, however, examine them too closely, or I fear they will be found to be swamps of rushes and gigantic grass. Still the land is not the less valuable, being admirably adapted in its present state for the best rice cultivation.

The Lingga river is famous for its alligators, which are both large and fierce ; but, from superstitions to which I shall afterwards refer, the natives seldom destroy them. In Sarawak there exists no such prejudice.

I am very partial to the tribe of Balau Dayaks, who have always shown so unmistakable a preference for the English—faithful under every temptation, and ready at a moment's warning to back them with a force of a thousand men.

The lads, too, have a spirit more akin to English youths than I have yet seen among the other tribes. I well remember the delight with which they learnt the games we taught them—joining in prisoner's

base with readiness, hauling at the rope, and shouting with laughter at French and English, represented by the names of two Dayak tribes. There is good material to work on here, and it could not be in better hands than those of their present missionary, Mr. Chambers. That his teaching has made any marked difference in their conduct I do not suppose, but he has influenced them, and his influence is yearly increasing.

It is pleasing to record a little success here, at the Quop, and at Lundu, or we should have to pronounce the Borneo mission a complete failure.

On my return from Banting, finding that Captain Brooke had been enabled to settle all his preliminary business, we started for a fort built at the entrance of the Sakarang, which was under the command of Mr. Brereton; we were accompanied by the Sarawak forces and the Balau Dayaks. The real value of the Batang Lupar as a river adapted for ships ceases shortly after leaving the junction of the Lingga, as sands begin, and a bore renders the navigation dangerous to the inexperienced; but it presents a noble expanse of water. As we started after the flood tide had commenced, the bore had passed on, and only gave notice of its late presence by little bubbling waves in the shallower places.

The banks of the river continue low, with only an occasional rising of the land; nothing but alluvial plains, formerly the favourite farming grounds of the Dayaks, then completely deserted, or tenanted only by pigs and deer; but it was expected that as soon as the peace ceremonies were over, the natives would not

allow this rich soil to remain uncultivated, and the expectation has been fulfilled, as this abandoned country was, on my last visit, covered with rice farms, while villages occupied the river banks.

After we had passed Pamutus, the site of the piratical town destroyed by Sir Henry Keppell, the river narrows, and is not above a hundred yards broad at the town of Sakarang, built at the confluence of a river of the same name. The fort was rather an imposing-looking structure, though constructed entirely of wood. It was square, with flanking towers, and its heavy armament completely commanded the river, and rendered it secure against any Dayak force.

The country was at the time influenced, rather than ruled, by the late Mr. Brereton, as his real power did not extend beyond the range of his guns. I never met a man who threw himself more enthusiastically into a most difficult position, or who, by his imaginative mind and yet determined will, exercised a greater power over Dayaks by the superiority of his intellect. A stranger can scarcely conceive a more difficult task than that of endeavouring to rule many thousands of wild warriors without being backed by physical force; but he did a great deal, though his exertions were too much for his strength, and he died a few years after, while engaged in his arduous task. In him the Sarawak service lost an admirable officer, and we an affectionate friend.

When we landed at the fort, we found a great crowd assembled to meet us, among whom were the principal Sakarang chiefs, as Gasing and Gila.

Many were fine-looking men of independent bearing and intelligent features. There were a few women about, but until the preliminaries of peace had been settled, they were not encouraged to come into the town.

It was found impossible to inquire into the origin of many of the quarrels, so Captain Brooke settled the matter by agreeing to give each party a sacred jar (valued at 8*l.*), a spear, and a flag. This was considered by them as satisfactory, and it was immediately determined that the next day the formal ceremonies should take place to ratify the engagement.

There was comparatively little difficulty in putting a stop to the piratical acts of the Sakarangs, as the fort commands the river; but it was almost impossible to prevent their head-hunting in the interior, there being so many unguarded outlets by which the hostile tribes could assail each other. The Bugau Dayaks—numerous and powerful, living on the Kapuas, and tributary to the Dutch—were principally exposed to their expeditions, and their justifiable retaliations kept up the hostile feeling.

Whenever a head-hunting party was expected to be on its return, a strict watch was kept to prevent it passing the fort. One day, at sunset, a couple of light canoes were seen stealing along the river bank, but a shot across their bows made them pull back, as having three human heads with them, they dared not come up to the fort. The sentries were doubled, and Mr. Brereton himself kept watch. About two hours before dawn, something was seen moving under the opposite bank. A musket was fired, but as the object continued floating by, it was thought to be the

trunk of a tree ; but no sooner had it neared a sheltering point than a yell of derision arose, as the Dayaks, swimming under cover of their boat, sprang into it, and pulled off in high glee up the Sakarang.

To prevent all chance of the hostile tribes of Sakarangs and Balaus quarrelling before the treaty was concluded, it was arranged that the latter tribe should remain at the entrance of the Undup, a stream about two miles below the town, and that we should drop down to that spot next day.

There we found a covered stage erected, and a crowd of nearly a thousand Balau men around it, and in their long war boats : the Sakarangs came also in large force, and our mediating party of about five hundred armed men was present likewise.

Captain Brooke clearly explained the object of the meeting, when the topic was taken up by the Malay chief of Sarawak, who, with easy eloquence, briefly touched on the various points in question. The Dayak chiefs followed, protesting that it was their desire to 'live in peace and friendship, and promising to be as brothers and warn each other of impending dangers. They all appear to have a natural gift of uttering their sentiments freely without the slightest hesitation.

The ceremony of killing a pig for each tribe followed ; it is thought more fortunate if the animal be severed in two by one stroke of the parang, half sword, half chopper. Unluckily, the Balau champion struck inartistically, and but reached half through the animal. The Sakarangs carefully selected a parang of approved sharpness, a superior one belonging to

Mr. Crookshank, and choosing a Malay skilled in the use of weapons placed the half-grown pig before him. The whole assembly watched with the greatest interest, and when he not only cut the pig through, but buried the weapon to the hilt in the mud, a slight shout of derision arose among the Sakarangs at the superior prowess of their champion. The Balaus, however, took it in good part and joined in the noise, till about two thousand men were yelling together with all the power of their lungs.

The sacred jar, the spear, and flag, were now presented to each tribe, and the assembly, no longer divided, mixed freely together. The Balaus were invited to come up to the town, and thus was commenced a good understanding which has continued without interruption to the present time—about eleven years.

There are many kinds of sacred jars. The best known are the Gusi, the Naga, and the Rusa, all most probably of Chinese origin. The Gusi, the most valuable of the three, is of a green colour, about eighteen inches high, and from its medicinal properties, exceedingly sought after. One fetched in the district of Tawaran, to the north of Labuan, the sum of four hundred pounds sterling, to be paid in produce; the vendor has for the last ten years been receiving the price, which, according to his own account, has not yet been fully paid, though probably he has received fifty per cent. over the amount agreed on from his ignorant customer. These jars are most numerous in the south of Borneo. The Naga is a jar two feet in height, ornamented with Chinese figures of dragons, and

worth about fifteen pounds, while the Rusa is covered with what the native artist considers a representation of some kind of deer, and is worth from seven to eight pounds. An attempt was made to manufacture an imitation in China, but the Dayaks immediately discovered the counterfeit.

We pulled up the Sakarang river to visit Gasing in his farmhouse, which was large, neat, and comfortable, in form and general appearance like the common village houses. Since the death of Mr. Brereton, in 1854, these Sea Dayaks dwelling on the Batang Lupar have been governed by Mr. Charles Johnson, another of Sir James Brooke's nephews. The influence he has acquired over them is extraordinary, and this may be traced to his living entirely among them; feeling an earnest desire for their welfare he cannot fail to show it, and convince them of his sincerity. He has shared their privations and their dangers, has led them against the piratical portion of their countrymen, and succeeded in overthrowing the last stronghold of the head-hunters.\* His expedition in 1861 was carried out regardless of all difficulties, and with complete success. His calmness and firmness under trying circumstances have ensured him the confidence of the people, and he can live contentedly among them, as he has discarded all European luxuries except a well-chosen library.

The Sea Dayaks are a very improvable people, as they see their own shortcomings and can imitate what they admire. A Sakarang chief noticed a road that was cut and properly ditched near the fort, and found that in all weathers it was dry, so he instantly

made a similar path from the landing-place on the river to his house, and I was surprised on entering it to see coloured representations of horses, knights in full armour, and ships drawn vigorously, but very inartistically, on the plank walls. I found, on inquiry, he had been given some copies of the *Illustrated London News*, and had endeavoured to imitate the engravings, using charcoal, lime, red ochre, and yellow earth as his materials.

One of these Dayak chiefs while in Singapore inspected several of the English houses; when he returned to his lodgings he said, "It is as well that the owners of those dwellings should not visit us in Borneo, or they would mistake our houses for the habitations of monkeys." It is seldom that the uncivilized can see their own deficiencies, though that is necessary to improvement. Another chief, struck with awe at the magnificence of the painted glass windows in the Singapore church, asked how it was possible for men to execute such wonderful works. "The spirits aid them," was the ready rejoinder of his companion.

The Sakarang women are, I think, the handsomest among the Dayaks of Borneo; they have good figures, light and elastic, with well-formed busts and very interesting, even pretty faces, with skins of so light a brown as almost to be yellow, yet a very healthy-looking yellow, with bright dark eyes, and long glistening black hair. The girls are very fond of using an oil made from the Katioh fruit, which has the scent of almonds. Their dress is not unbecoming, petticoats reaching from below the waist to the knees, and jackets ornamented with fringe.



All their clothes are made from native cloth of native yarn, spun from cotton grown in the country. These girls are generally thought to be lively in conversation and quick in repartee.

The Sakarang men are clean built, upright in their gait, and of a very independent bearing. They are well behaved and gentle in their manners, and, on their own ground, superior to all others in activity. Their national dress is a chawat or waistcloth, and in warlike expeditions they are partial to bright red cloth jackets, so that when assembled at a distance, they look like a party of English soldiers. The Sakarang and Seribas men have the peculiar practice of wearing brass rings all along the edge of their ears, sometimes using as many as a dozen. I thought this custom confined to them, but I find the Muruts of Padas, opposite Labuan, also practise it.

Their strength and activity are remarkable. I have seen a Dayak carry a heavy Englishman down the steepest hills, and when one of their companions is severely wounded they bear him home, whatever may be the distance. They exercise a great deal from boyhood in wrestling, swimming, running, and sham-fighting, and are excellent jumpers. When a little more civilized they would make good soldiers, being brave by nature. They are, however, short—a man five feet five inches high would be considered tall, the average is perhaps five feet three inches.

Some of them are striking looking men; one, named Loyo, I saw as a boy, but he is now a man, and a pirate chief. Mr. Johnson described him thus

when he came to stipulate for terms of surrender:—  
“While we were waiting, Loyo came to pay his respects. I could not help remarking what a fine manly manner and appearance he presented. Dressed in his chawat, a jacket, and ornamented head-dress, his long sword hanging by his side, he looked anything but conquered, though his manner was respectful. He walked like a warrior chieftain, as straight as a lath, and spoke as if he were receiving a friend at the threshold of his father’s mansion. We talked for some time, and then shook hands. When he went away, he embraced several of my Malays, in remembrance of boyish days spent together hunting, snaring, and farming.”

We did not visit the interior of the Batang Lupar, but it is reported to be very populous, and the Chinese are now working gold there. I have, however, penetrated to the very sources of the Sakarang, and found it, after a couple of days’ journey, much encumbered by drift-wood and rocks, with shallow rapids over pebbly beds. This interior is very populous, and from a view we had on a hill over the upper part of the Seribas River, as far as the hills in which the Kanowit rises, we could perceive but little old forest.

I may mention that the crime of poisoning is almost unknown on the north-west coast, but it is very generally believed that the people of the interior of the Kapuas, a few days’ walk from the Batang Lupar, are much given to the practice. Sherif Sahib, and many others who visited that country, died suddenly, and the Malays assert it was from poison, but of this I have no proof.

Near the very sources of the Kapuas\* live the Malau Dayaks, who are workers in gold and brass, and it is very singular that members of this tribe can wander safely through the villages of the head-hunting Seribas and Sakarang, and are never molested,—on the contrary, they are eagerly welcomed by the female portion of the population, and the young men are not indifferent to their arrival; but the specimens of their work that I have seen do not show much advance in civilization. The Malau districts produce gold, and it is said very fine diamonds.

I must tell an anecdote of the public executioner of Sakarang. In 1861, a native was tried and condemned to death for a barbarous murder, and according to the custom in Malay countries, the next day was fixed for carrying out the sentence. A Chinese Christian lad, who was standing near the executioner, said to him earnestly, “What! no time given him for repentance?” “Repentance!” cried the executioner, contemptuously. “Repentance! he is not a British subject.” A curious confusion of ideas. Both were speaking in English, and very good English.

I tasted here, for the first time, the rambi fruit, which looks something like a large grape, growing in bunches, pleasantly sweet, yet with a slight acidity, yellow skin, with the interior divided into two fleshy pulps.

At the broadest part of the Batang Lupar, nearly four miles across, I saw a drove of swine swimming

\* The Kapuas is a great river which, rising at the back of the Sarawak territories, runs to the westward and flows into the sea in the Dutch settlement of Pontianak.

from one shore to the other. If pigs do this with ease, we need not be surprised that the tigers get over the old Singapore Strait to devour, on a low average, a man a day.

After a short stay at the Sakarang Fort, we dropped down the river to the deep anchorage at Pamutus, where we saw the bore coming up, and it was a pretty sight from our safe position. A crested wave spread from shore to shore, and rushed along with inconceivable speed, to subside as it approached deep water, to commence again at the sands with as great violence when it had passed us. At full and change, few native boats escape which are caught on the shallows, but are rolled over and over, and the men are dashed breathless on the bank, few escaping with life.

With the ebb tide we fell down to the Lingga, and re-embarking in the *Jolly Bachelor* started for the mouth, and in the evening set sail from the Batang Lupar. Reclining on the deck in the bright moonlight, we had a discussion on Marsden's theory of the land and sea breezes, and one of our party denied the correctness of the authority whom we looked upon as not to be challenged in all that relates to the Eastern Archipelago. At midnight the land breeze commenced blowing, as the ocean does retain the heat longer than the land, and at midday the sea breeze set in, which carried us pleasantly onward, passing the mouths of the Seribas and Kalaka, to our anchorage in the noble river of Rejang. We did not triumph over our adversary, but recommended him to study Marsden more carefully. On the bar at the entrance of this river at dead low water, we had one cast which did not exceed

three fathoms, but I do not think we were in the centre of the channel.

At the mouth of the Rejang is a small town of Milanaus, a people differing greatly from the Malays in manners and customs; some converted to Islamism are clothed like other Mohamedans, while those who still delight in pork dress like Dayaks, to which race they undoubtedly belong. Their houses are built on lofty posts, or rather whole trunks of trees, to render them more secure from the attacks of the Seribas pirates.

It is stated that at the erection of the largest house, a deep hole was dug to receive the first post, which was then suspended over it; a slave girl was placed in the excavation, and at a signal the lashings were cut, and the enormous timber descended, crushing the girl to death. It was a sacrifice to the spirits. I once saw a more harmless imitation of the same ceremony. The chief of the Quop Dayaks was about to erect a flag-staff near his house, the excavation was made, and the timber secured, but a chicken only was thrown in and crushed by the descending pole.

I made particular inquiries on the subject whilst I was in Brunei in 1861. There happened to be in the capital some very respectable men who had lived all their lives among the Milanaus of the district of Muka, and they said that the inhabitants of their town who remained unconverted to Islamism had within the last few years sacrificed slaves at the death of a respectable man, and buried them with the corpse, in order that they might be ready to attend their master in the other world. This conversation took place in the

presence of the Sultan, who added he had often heard the report of such acts having been committed. One of the nobles present observed that such things were rare, but that he had known of a similar sacrifice taking place among the Bisayas of the River Kalias, opposite our colony of Labuan. He said a large hole was dug in the ground, in which was placed four slaves and the body of a dead chief. A small supply of provisions was added, when beams and boughs were thrown upon the grave, and earth heaped to a great height over the whole. A prepared bamboo was allowed to convey air to those confined, who were thus left to starve. These sacrifices can seldom occur, or we should have heard more of them. There were rumours, however, that at the death of a great Kayan chief some years since slaves were devoted to destruction in order to wait upon him in the future world.

In front of the houses at the town of Rejang, near which we anchored, were erected swings for the amusement of the young lads and the little children. One about forty feet in height was fastened to thick poles arranged as a triangle, and kept firm in their position by ropes like the shrouds of a ship. From the top hung a strong cane cable, with a large ring or hoop at the end. About thirty feet on one side was erected a sloping stage as a starting-point. Mounting on this, one of the boys with a string drew the hoop towards him, and making a spring into it, away he went. Other lads were ready, who, as the ring approached, successively sprung upon it or seized the rope, until there were five or six in a cluster, shouting,

laughing, yelling, and swinging. For the younger children and the girls smaller ones were erected, as it required courage and skill to play on the larger.

The Rejang is one of the finest rivers in Borneo, and extends far into the interior. We ascended it upwards of one hundred miles, and never had less than four fathoms. Mr. Steel, who lived many years there, told me that it continued navigable for about forty miles farther, then there were dangerous rapids, but above them the water again deepened. The Rejang has many mouths, but the principal are the one we entered, and another to the eastward of Cape Sirik, called Egan. Its chief tributaries below the rapids are the Sirikei, the Kanowit, and the Katibas, the last two very populous.

Above the delta formed by the Egan and the Rejang the river is about a mile and a half broad, with islets scattered over it, but afterwards it contracts to about a thousand yards, and has a fine appearance. The scenery here is not varied by hill or dale; the land is low, but the banks were rendered interesting by the varied tints of the jungle; blossoms and young leaves were bursting out in every variety of colour, from the faintest green to the darkest brown.

The air was filled one day with a kind of may-fly in astonishing numbers; I have never seen anything like it before or since, they fell by myriads into the water, and afforded a feast to thousands of fish that rose with a dash to the surface, covering the river with tiny widening circles.

During our passage up we had an instance of the insecurity to which the head-hunters formerly reduced

this country. We landed at a place called Munggu Ayer (water hill) to bathe; a party of our men insisted on keeping watch over us, as many people had lost their lives there. Being a good spot to procure water, boats are accustomed to take in their supplies at this well, and the Dayaks used to lurk in the neighbouring jungle to rush out on the unwary.

Anchored opposite the entrance of the Kanowit, where it was intended to build a fort to stop the exit of the fleets of Dayak boats that used to descend this river to attack the people of the Sago countries. Leaving the force thus engaged, I went and took up my residence in the village of the Kanowit Dayaks, built opposite the entrance of that stream. The Rejang is here about 600 or 700 yards broad.

The village consisted of two long houses, one measuring 200 feet, the other 475. They were built on posts about forty feet in height and about eighteen inches in diameter. The reason they give for making their posts so thick is, that when the Kayans attack a village they drag one of their long war boats ashore, and, turning it over, use it as a monstrous shield. About fifty bear it on their heads till they arrive at the ill-made palisades surrounding the hamlets, these they have little difficulty in demolishing; they then get under the house, and endeavour to cut away the posts, being protected from the villagers above by their extemporized shield. If the posts are thin, the assailants quickly gain the victory; if very thick, it gives the garrison time to defeat them by allowing heavy beams and stones to fall upon the boat, and even to bring their little brass wall pieces to bear



upon it; the Kayans will fly if they suffer a slight loss.

The Kanowit Dayaks are a very different people from those who live on the river of the same name, the latter being all immigrants from the Seribas and Sakarang. The appearance of the former people is very inferior; few of them have the fine healthy look of those I saw in the Batang Lupar; the women are remarkably plain, and scarcely possess what is so common in Borneo, a bright pair of eyes; ophthalmia is very prevalent among them, partly caused by their extracting their eyelashes, while some neighbouring tribes even shave off their eyebrows. They have another custom which is equally inelegant, that of drawing down the lobes of their ears to the shoulder, by means of heavy lead earrings.

Some of the men are curiously tatoood; a kind of pattern covers their breast and shoulders, and sometimes extends to their knees, having much the appearance of scale-armour. Others have their chins ornamented to resemble beards, an appendage denied them by nature.

I have never before entered a village without noticing some interesting children, but I observed none here; though active, they looked unhealthy and dirty.

Belabun, the chief of the tribe, has had, from his position, a very extensive intercourse with men, particularly with the Kayans, who inhabit the upper portion of the river. One of our objects in visiting the country was to proceed to the interior to make friends with the numerous Kayan chiefs who live

there; but the small-pox had, unfortunately, broken out among them, and the ascent of the river was forbidden, and all had fled into the forest. I much regretted this, as I never had another opportunity of ascending the Rejang.

It is singular how the story of the men with tails has spread. They talked of it here, and I have heard of it in every part I have visited, but their country is always a few days' journey farther off. The most circumstantial account I ever had was from a man who had traded much on the north-east coast of Borneo. He said he had seen and felt the tails, they were four inches long, and were very stiff, so that all the people sat on seats in which there was a hole made for this remarkable appendage to fit in.

Sherif Musahor, a chief of Arab descent, and one of the most violent men that ever tormented these countries, arriving from Siriki, came in to see us; he is a very heavy-looking fellow; at one time we were great friends, being equally fond of chess. It is not my object to enter into political affairs, but I may mention that many years subsequently having instigated the murder of two Englishmen he fled north, and after a variety of adventures found himself in 1861 at the head of a band of desperadoes at a place called Muka. Sir James Brooke had often been reported dead, and on his arrival at Sarawak early in that year the news spread like wildfire along the coast. Sherif Musahor, greatly disturbed, called before him a Madras trader and asked him, "Did you see the Rajah?"—"Yes."

"Had he all his teeth perfect?"—"Yes,"

“ Ah, you lie ! when I saw him last he had a front tooth knocked out.”

The Madras man saw the fiery look of this desperate chief, but without losing his presence of mind for a moment, answered, “ What, have you not heard that the Rajah bathed in the waters of the Nile, and that it has restored his youth again ? ”

His reply was satisfactory to all the Mohamedans present, who believe implicitly in every wonder told in the Arabian Nights.

One afternoon, it being a very warm day, we were reclining on our mats, when a burst of wailing around us told that bad news had been received. One of the chief's brothers had returned from the interior and brought the following intelligence : It appeared that about two years and half before, a younger brother longing to see the world, had started off with thirteen young men to the sources of the Kapuas river ; they travelled on till they reached a Kayan tribe with whom their people were friends, and stayed with them for a few months. One day their hosts started on a head-hunting expedition, and invited Belabun's brother and six of their guests to accompany them ; they never returned, having all been killed by the Kayans themselves. Why or wherefore it is impossible to tell, but it is supposed that having failed in their head-hunt, and being ashamed to meet their women without trophies, they had fallen upon their guests. Their remaining companions being in a neighbouring village escaped. Belabun, anxious to have news of his brother, had sent the one who had just returned to look for him. He patiently

tracked him, but meeting with the seven survivors, learnt the fate of his brother; they returned overland, but the young chief, impatient to be at home, made a bark canoe, in which he reached the village.

Belabun and his people were greatly excited, and moved about the house in a restless and anxious manner, while the wailing of the female relatives was very distressing, particularly of the young girl whom the wanderer left as a bride.

It may appear incredible that even the wildest people should commit so treacherous a deed, but before the Kanowit was well guarded, a Sakarang chief from the interior, named Buah Raya, passed with fifty war boats and pulled up the Rejang. Arriving at a village of Pakatan Dayaks, his allies, he took the men as his guides to attack some Punans, who, however, escaped; mortified at this result he killed the guides, and on his return carried off all the women and children as captives. This was the chief who refused to enter an English church, saying "an old man might die through entering the white men's tabernacle." He would or could give no explanation of this observation.

These Kanowits follow the Milanau custom of sending much of a dead man's property adrift in a frail canoe on the river: they say all his property, but this is confined to talk.

We heard so much of the deceased chief's goods, which were to be thrown away, as it is said they are considered to belong to the departed and not to those who remain, that we went to examine the place where they lay. We found a sort of four-sided bier erected,

covered with various coloured cloths, and within it his bride widow lay moaning and wailing, surrounded by his favourite arms, his gongs, his ornaments, and all he had considered valuable. Among his treasures was the handle of a kris, representing the figure of Budha in the usual sitting posture, which they said had descended to them from their ancestors.

As I expected, these valuables were not sent adrift, but merely a few old things, which even sacrilegious strangers would scarcely think worth plundering.

A short time before the Rejang came under Sir James Brooke's sway, a relation of Belabun died. Having no enemy near, he looked about for a victim. Seeing a Dayak of the Katibas passing down the river, he and a small party followed and overtook him just as he reached the isles; they persuaded him to come ashore, and then seized and killed him, taking his head home in triumph. As this murder took place before Sir James Brooke's jurisdiction extended over the country, it was difficult to bring the offender to account, but on the relations coming to demand satisfaction, Captain Brooke insisted upon his paying the customary fine, which satisfied the Katibas.

The second chief of this tribe is Sikalei, who, when one of his children died, sallied out and killed the first man he met—they say it was one of his own tribe, but it was the custom to kill the first person, even if it were a brother: fortunately they now are brought under a Government which is strong enough to prevent such practices.

They are a very curious people; the men dress as Dayaks, the women as Milanaus, parting their hair

in the middle, while the other aboriginal races draw it back from the forehead. They appear to be much influenced in their customs by the surrounding people; the men tatoo like Kayans, the women not.

We saw a very curious war-dance; two warriors, one of a Rejang tribe, the other from a distant river, commenced a sham fight, with sword and shield; the first was dressed as a Malay, the second as a Dayak. With slow side movements of their arms and legs, advancing and retreating, cutting and guarding to a measured step, and in regular time; then they changed to quick movements, stooping low till the shield completely covered them: with a hopping, dancing motion they kept giving and receiving blows till one of them fled; the other immediately followed, but cautiously, as the fugitive was supposed to be planting spikes in the path. At last they again met, and after a fierce combat one was slain, and the victor with a slow dancing step approached the body and was supposed to cut off the head of his enemy, but, on looking at it attentively, found he had killed a friend, and showed signs of much grief. With a measured tread, he again drew near the body and pretended to restore the head; he retired and advanced several times, shaking the various limbs of the friend's body, when the slain sprang up as lively as ever, and the two wound up by a frantic dance.

I have mentioned the ceremonies that took place at the solemnization of peace between the Sakarangs and Balaus; here they were slightly different. A pig was placed between the representatives of two tribes, who, after calling down the vengeance of the spirits on

those who broke the treaty, plunged their spears into the animal, and then exchanged weapons. Drawing their krises, they each bit the blade of the others, and so completed the affair. The sturdy chief of Kajulo declared, however, that he considered his word as more binding than any such ceremony.

In the neighbourhood of the Kanowit, and scattered about these countries, are the wandering tribes of Pakatans and Punans, who seldom build regular houses, but prefer running up temporary huts, and when they have exhausted the jungle around of wild beasts and other food, move to a new spot. They are the great collectors of wax, edible birds' nests, camphor, and rattans. They are popularly said to be fairer than the other inhabitants of Borneo, as, living in the thickest part of the old forest, they are never exposed to the sun. Those we have seen were certainly darker, but they themselves assert that their women are more fair. It is probable that exposure to the air has as much effect upon them as exposure to the sun. I have often met with their little huts in the forest and used them as night lodgings, but have never come across these wild tribes. I have seen individual men, but never communities. A few have lately taken to build houses and plant rice, though done in a slovenly manner it is the first step in advance. The difficulty, however, is to prevent the more settled tribes from oppressing them.

The Pakatans and Punans are the true manufacturers of the Sumpitan, or blow-pipe, and in their hands it is a formidable weapon. It is curious to examine this product of their skill, and we cannot

but admire the accuracy with which the hole is drilled through a hard wood shaft some seven or eight feet long.

I had often heard of the deadly effect of the poison into which the arrow was dipped, but always disbelieved the bulk of the native stories, though I must believe in the evidence we have lately had. In 1859, the Kanowit tribe, instigated by Sherif Musahor, murdered two English gentlemen, and then fled into the interior. Mr. Johnson, who led the attack on them, tells me he lost thirty men by wounds from the poisoned arrows. He found the bodies of Dayaks who had gone out as skirmishers without a mark, beyond the simple puncture where a drop of blood rested on the wound. One man was struck near him; he instantly had the arrow extracted, the wound sucked, a glass of brandy administered, and the patient sent off to the boats about four miles distant. Two companions supported him, and they had strict orders not to allow him to sleep till he reached the landing-place: they made him keep awake, and he recovered. As it is common to destroy deer, wild boars and other creatures with these arrows, no doubt man can also be killed. The arrow is often pointed with a serpent's tooth, loosely fastened on, so that when the weapon is withdrawn, the tooth and the poison around it remain in the wound.

I will now give an account of the manners and customs of the Sea Dayaks.



## CHAPTER II.

## SOCIAL LIFE OF THE SEA DAYAKS.

THE Sea Dayaks naturally look upon the birth of a child as a very ordinary event, and celebrate it with few ceremonies; occasionally guns are fired, but even that practice has almost fallen into disuse. However, a few months after the birth of the infant, the Sakarang Dayaks give a feast in its honour, which generally takes place before they commence preparing their land for the rice crop, and another after the harvest to "launch the child" on the world. During these feasts the *manang*, or priest, waves the odorous *arcca*-blossom over the babe, and moves about the house chanting monotonous tunes. The festival lasts a day and a night. The Dayak women suffer very little at their confinements, and seldom remain quiet beyond a few days. They are very anxious to have children, but if they have a preference, it is for boys; and when the only child is a daughter, they often make a vow to fire guns and give a feast, should the next prove a son.

It is very singular, that though these Dayaks are exceedingly fond of their offspring, yet infanticide

sometimes occurs among the Batang Lupars, arising, it is said, from a selfish feeling of affection. One man confessed to Mr. Johnson that he had put an infant to death, because all the children born to him previously had died just as they arrived at an age when he could fondly love them. He said he could not endure to think that it should occur to him again. But this must have been a rare instance, since they feel acutely the loss of any child, and wander about inconsolable, and mope, and often refuse to work for months. The Batang Lupars do not bear misfortunes well ; even the loss of houses by fire, or their crops from bad seasons, disheartens them to an extent that is surprising to those who have watched the conduct of the Seribas Dayaks. The piratical pursuits in which these latter delighted have certainly given great energy to their character, and they recover immediately from the effects of the destruction of their villages and of their property, and set to work to create more wealth.

The Sea Dayaks, as I have observed, generally prefer male children ; and the more mischievous and boisterous they are when young the greater the delight they afford their parents. The observation, " He is very wicked," is the greatest praise. They indulge them in everything, and at home give way to their caprices in an extraordinary manner. If the parents are affectionate to their children, the latter warmly return it, and instances have even occurred when, oppressed by sorrow at the reproaches of a father, a child has privately taken poison and destroyed himself.

Like other tribes in the same state of civilization, the Dayaks are fond of oratory, and while the elders

are discoursing or delivering long speeches, the young lads look gravely on, never indulging in a laugh, which would be regarded as a serious offence.

The Dayaks are a very sociable people, and love to have their families around them; grandfathers spoil their grandchildren, and during the heavy work of the harvest, the very old ones stay at home surrounded by merry groups of young ones.

Parents and children, brothers and sisters, very seldom quarrel; when they do so, it is from having married into a family with whom afterwards they may have disputes about land. One would imagine that was a subject not likely to create dissensions in a country like Borneo; but there are favourite farming grounds, and boundaries are not very settled. It used to be the practice not to have recourse to arms on those occasions, but the two parties collecting their relatives and friends, would fight with sticks for the coveted spot. Now, however, their disputes are brought to their chiefs, or the nearest English officer.

Among the Sibuyaus, the Sea Dayaks of Lundu, no ceremony attends a betrothment, but when the consent of the parents of the bride has been obtained, an early day is appointed for the marriage. As a general rule, the husband follows the wife, that is, lives with and works for the parents of the latter. On the wedding-day, the bride and bridegroom are brought from opposite ends of the village to the spot where the ceremony is to be performed. They are made to sit on two bars of iron, that blessings as lasting, and health as vigorous as the metal, may attend the pair. A cigar and betel leaf prepared with

the areca nut are next put into the hands of the bride and bridegroom. One of the priests then waves two fowls over the heads of the couple, and in a long address to the Supreme Being, calls down blessings upon the pair, and implores that peace and happiness may attend the union. After the heads of the affianced have been knocked against each other three or four times, the bridegroom puts the prepared siri leaf and the cigar into the mouth of the bride, while she does the same to him, whom she thus acknowledges as her husband. The fowls are then killed, and the blood caught in two cups, and from its colour the priest foretells the future happiness or misery of the newly-married. The ceremony is closed by a feast, with dancing and noisy music.

It is worthy of remark that the respect paid by a son-in-law to the father of his wife is greater than that paid to his own father. He treats him with much ceremony, must never pronounce his name, nor must he take the liberty of eating off the same plate, or drinking out of the same cup, or even of lying down on the same mat.

Among the Balaus, or Sea Dayaks of Lingga, there is also no ceremony at a betrothment; in fact, Mr. Chambers informs me that the word is not known in their language. Indeed their manners preclude the necessity of any such formal arrangement.

Marriage itself is a very simple affair, and is not accompanied by any long rite. However, as it is different from that practised in Lundu, I will enter into particulars.

Two or three days previous to the ceremony, the

mother of the bridegroom usually gives the bride's relations a plate or a basin. The wedding takes place at the house of the girl, and the rite is called *blah pinang*, or the splitting of the prepared areca nut. It is divided into three portions, and the mother, after placing them in a little basket, and covering them over with a red cloth, sets them on a raised altar in front of the bride's house. The respective friends of the families then meet in conclave and enjoy the native luxury of prepared areca nut; and it is now determined what shall be the fine paid in case the husband should separate from his wife after she shall be declared pregnant, or after she has borne a child. This is a very necessary precaution, as I shall have presently to show.

I may notice that among these Dayaks there is great pride of birth, and that parents will seldom consent to their daughter's marrying a man of very inferior condition. Many lamentable occurrences have arisen from this among other causes, which I will mention when treating of love. As a general rule, if the bride be an only daughter, or of higher rank, the husband joins her family—if he be of higher rank, or an only son, she follows him, and then she is conducted under a canopy of red cloth to the house of his parents. If they should be of equal condition and similarly circumstanced, they divide their time among their respective families, until they set up house-keeping on their own account.

There are three subjects of which I must now treat,—and they are the chastity of the women, love, and divorce. I find it difficult to reconcile the state-

ments I have to make ; they are modest, and yet unchaste, love warmly and yet divorce easily, but are generally faithful to their husbands when married.

The Sibuyaus, though they do not consider the sexual intercourse of their young people as a positive crime, are careful of the honour of their daughters, as they attach an idea of great indecency to promiscuous connection. They are far advanced beyond their brethren in this respect, and are of opinion that an unmarried girl proving with child must be offensive to the superior powers, who, instead of always chastising the individual, punish the tribe by misfortunes happening to its members. They, therefore, on the discovery of the pregnancy fine the lovers, and sacrifice a pig to propitiate offended Heaven, and to avert that sickness or those misfortunes that might otherwise follow ; and they inflict heavy mulcts for every one who may have suffered from any severe accident, or who may have been drowned within a month before the religious atonement was made ; lighter fines are levied if a person be simply wounded.

As these pecuniary demands fall upon the families of both parties, great care is taken of the young girls, and seldom is it found necessary to sacrifice the pig. After marriage the women are generally chaste, though cases of adultery are occasionally brought before their chiefs.

Among the Dayaks on the Batang Lupar, however, unchastity is more common ; but the favours of the women are generally confined to their own countrymen, and usually to one lover. Should the girl prove with child, it is an understanding between them that

they marry, and men seldom, by denying the paternity, refuse to fulfil their engagements. Should, however, the girl be unable to name the father, she is exposed to the reproaches of her relatives, and many to escape them have taken poison. In respectable families they sacrifice a pig, and sprinkle the doors with its blood to wash away the sin, and the erring maiden's position is rendered so uncomfortable that she generally tries to get away from home.

In the account of the Land Dayaks, I will mention the manner in which the young lover approaches the curtains of his mistress. As this seldom ends in immorality, it may be likened to the Welch and Afghan bundling. The Sea Dayaks have the same practice of seeking the girls at night, and as the favoured lover is seldom refused entrance to the curtains, it may be compared to the system of company-keeping which obtains in many of our agricultural counties, where the brides have children a couple of months after marriage. The morality of the Sea Dayaks is, perhaps, superior to that of the Malays, but inferior to that of the Land Dayaks.

During one of my visits to the Sakarang I heard a story which is rather French in its termination. A young man proposed to a girl and was accepted by her, but her parents refused to give their consent, as he was of very inferior birth. Every means was tried to soften their hearts, but they were obstinate, and endeavoured to induce her to give up her lover and marry another. In their despair the lovers retired to the jungle, and swallowed the poisonous juice of the tuba plant: next morning they were found dead, with

their cold and stiff arms entwined round each other. Cases are not of very rare occurrence among the Sakarang Dayaks, where disappointed love has sought solace in the grave.

Of the warmth of married affection, I have never heard a more striking instance than the following :—the story has been told before, but it is worth repeating. Ijau, a Balau chief, was bathing with his wife in the Lingga river, a place notorious for man-eating alligators, when Indra Lela, a Malay, passing in a boat remarked—“ I have just seen a very large animal swimming up the stream.” Upon hearing this, Ijau told his wife to go up the steps and he would follow ; she got safely up, but he, stopping to wash his feet, was seized by the alligator, dragged into the middle of the stream, and disappeared from view. His wife hearing a cry turned round, and seeing her husband’s fate sprang into the river, shrieking, “ Take me also ! ” and dived down at the spot where she had seen the alligator sink with his prey. No persuasion could induce her to come out of the water ; she swam about, diving in all the places most dreaded from being a resort of ferocious reptiles, seeking to die with her husband ; at last her friends came down and forcibly removed her to their house.

Husbands and wives appear to pass their lives very agreeably together, which may partly be caused by the facility of divorce. Many men and women have been married seven or eight times before they find the partner with whom they desire to spend the rest of their lives. I saw a girl of seventeen who had already had three husbands. These divorces take



place at various times, from a few days after marriage, to one or two years. However, after the birth of a child, they seldom seek to separate, and if they do the husband is fined, but not the wife. The work of the family is divided, though perhaps the female has most continued labour. The man builds and repairs the houses and boats, fells all the heavy timber at the farm, brings home the firewood, and very often nurses the baby. The wives are very domestic, and in their way carefully attend to household duties; they cook, clean the rice, feed the pigs and poultry, spin the yarn, weave the cloth, and make the clothes. A wife is also expected to be polite to visitors, to bring out her finest mats, and offer the interminable areca nut to her guests.

Strangers are generally very welcome, and it would be a painful idea to enter into their heads that they were considered either mean or inhospitable, so the wayfarer is presented on his arrival with the best food in the house. Occasionally it is not very welcome to a European, as it too often consists of fish that emits a very high scent, or eggs of a very ancient date; but there is generally some fruit, or a little clean boiled rice. I was once presented with some preserved durian fruit, which stank so fearfully as to drive my friends completely out of the house. But the greatest luxury that can be presented to a native is always forthcoming, and that is the box of areca nuts, and the other chewing condiments.

As the wife works hard, she is generally very strong and capable of taking her own part. She is very jealous of her husband, much more so than he is of

her. If he be found flirting with another woman, the wife may inflict a severe thrashing on her, but only with sticks, while if the offending woman have a husband, he may do the same to the man. To escape these domestic broils, he generally starts off into the jungle, and pretends to or really does go head-hunting.

The causes of divorce are innumerable, but incompatibility of temper is perhaps the most common; when they are tired of each other they do not say so, but put the fault upon an unfavourable omen or a bad dream, either of which is allowed to be a legitimate cause of divorce. Should they, however, be still fond of each other, the sacrifice of a pig will effectually prevent any misfortune happening to them from neglecting to separate, on account of inattention to the warning. Partners often divorce from pique, or from a petty quarrel, and are then allowed to come together again without any fresh marriage ceremony. Among the Balau Dayaks, it is necessary for the offended husband to send a ring to his wife, before the marriage can be considered as finally dissolved, without which, should they marry again, they would be liable to be punished for infidelity.

I may add, that as the wife does an equal share of work with her husband, at a divorce she is entitled to half the wealth created by their mutual labours.

Among the Sea Dayaks, corpses are usually buried; although, should a man express a wish to share the privilege of the priests and be, like them, exposed on a raised platform, the relations are bound to comply with this request.

Immediately the breath has left the body, the female

relations commence loud and melancholy laments ; they wash the corpse, and dress it in its finest garments, and often, if a man, all his arms. They then bear it forth to the great common hall, where it is surrounded by its friends to be mourned over. In some villages a hireling leads the lament, which is continued till the corpse leaves the house. Before this takes place, however, the body is rolled up in cloths and fine mats, kept together by pieces of bamboo tied on with rattans, and taken to the burial-ground. A fowl is then killed as a sacrifice to the spirit who guards the earth, and they commence digging the grave from two and a half to four and a half feet deep, according to the person's rank ; deeper than five feet would be unlawful. Whilst this operation is going on, others fell a large tree, and cutting off about six feet, split it in two, and then hollow out the pieces with an adze. One part serves as the coffin, the other as the lid ; the body is placed within, and the two are secured together by strips of pliable canes bound round them.

After the coffin is lowered into the grave, many things belonging to the deceased are cast in, together with rice, tobacco, and betel nut, as they believe they may prove useful in the other world, or as it is called by them Sabayan.

It was an old custom, but now perhaps falling somewhat into disuse, to place money, gold and silver ornaments, clothes, and various china and brass utensils in the grave ; but these treasures were too great temptations to those Malays who were addicted to gambling, and the rifling of the place of interment has often given great and deserved offence to the rela-

tions. As it is almost impossible to discover the offenders, it is now the practice to break in pieces all the utensils placed in the grave, and to conceal as carefully as possibly the valuable ornaments. The whole tribe of the Lundu Sibuyaas was thrown into a great state of excited indignation on finding that some Malays had opened the place of interment of their late chief and stolen the valuable property.

The relatives and bearers of the corpse must return direct to the house from which they started before entering another, as it is unlawful or unlucky to stop, whatever may be the distance to be traversed.

They are often very particular about the dress in which they are to be buried. Many of the old Sakarang women have asked Mr. Johnson for handsome jackets to be used after their death for this purpose, saying that when they arrived in the other world, they would mention his name with respect and gratitude on account of the kindness shown to them in this.

The Dayaks who have fallen in battle are seldom interred, but a paling is put round them to keep away the swine, and they are left there. Those who commit suicide are buried in different places from others, as it is supposed that they will not be allowed to mix in the seven-storied heaven with such of their fellow-countrymen as come by their death in a natural manner or from the influence of the spirits.

It is very satisfactory to be able to state that the Sea Dayaks have a tolerably clear idea of one Omnipotent Being who created and now rules over the world. They call him Batara; beneath him are many good and innumerable bad spirits, and the fear of the latter

causes them to make greater offerings to them than to the good spirits. The awe with which many of them are named has induced a few, among others, Mr. Chambers, to imagine that their religion is a species of polytheism. But that is, I think, clearly a mistake: as well might a Mohamedan declare that Christians were Polytheists, because Roman Catholics believe in the interposition of the Virgin and of the saints, and because members of all sects fear the wiles of Satan. It is a common saying among the Dayaks, "With God's blessing we shall have a good harvest next year."

Mr. Gomez, who has lived nine years among the Sibuyaus, and Mr. Johnson, who has mixed with all sections of the Sea Dayaks still longer, take my view. There are evil spirits of various kinds who reside in the jungles, or the mountains, or the earth: all sicknesses, misfortunes, and death, proceed from them, while to Batara is attributed every blessing.

But when they make offerings, both classes of spirits are propitiated, and, as usual, the wicked have the larger share. The priests offer a long prayer, and supplicate them to depart from the afflicted house, or from the sick man. Of the seven platefuls of food, four are given to the evil spirits, and cast forth or exposed in the forests, while the others are offered to the good spirits, who are implored to protect and bless them. The food intended for the latter is not considered to be interdicted, but may be, and is always, eaten.

The Lingga Dayaks, in subjection to Batara, have various good spirits—as Stampandei, who superintends the propagation of mankind; Pulang Ganah, who inhabits the earth and gives fertility to it, and to him

are addressed the offerings at the feasts given whilst preparing the rice cultivation; Singalong Burong, the god of war, excites their utmost reverence, and to him are offered the head-feasts. On those occasions, he comes down and hovers in the form of a kite over the house, and guns are fired and gongs are beaten in his honour, and his brave followers married to his daughters appear in the forms of their omen birds. No wonder he is honoured: he gives success in war, and delights in their acquisition of the heads of their enemies. Natiang inhabits the summits of the hills, and is one of their demigods. The Linggas tell many stories of his exploits: the most famous was his expedition to the skies to recover his wife, who had been caught in a noose and hoisted up there by his old enemy, Apei Sabit Berkait. To dream of him is to receive the gift of bravery. Mr. Chambers could add much to our knowledge of these people if he would make a collection of their stories and ballads.

Among the Sakarangs the belief in one Supreme Being is clear, and they do not appear to have any inferior deities who approach him in attributes: they have demigods, good and bad spirits, but no sharer of God's throne. They believe that the good and bad spirits have the power to prevent, or to enable them to succeed in any object they may have in view. They, therefore, make offerings to them, particularly when any of their family are suffering from illness.

When the small-pox was committing great havoc among those villagers who would not allow themselves to be inoculated, they ran into the jungle in every direction, caring for no one but themselves, leaving

the houses empty, and dwelling far away in the most silent spots, in parties of two and three, and sheltered only by a few leaves. When such calamities come upon them, they utterly lose all command over themselves, and become as timid children. Those seized with the complaint are abandoned: all they do is to take care that a bundle of firewood, a cooking-pot, and some rice, are placed within their reach. On account of this practice, few recover, as in the delirium they roll on the ground and die.

When the fugitives become short of provisions, a few of the old men who have already had the complaint creep back to the houses at night and take a supply of rice. In the daytime they do not dare to stir or to speak above a whisper for fear the spirits should see or hear them. They do not call the small-pox by its name, but are in the habit of saying, "Has he yet left you?" at other times they speak of it as jungle leaves or fruit, or the datu or the chief. Those tribes who inoculate suffer very little.

Their priests frequently use the names of the invisible spirits, and are supposed to be able to interpret their language, as well as to hold communion with them, in ordinary times they pretend to work the cure of the sick by means of incantations, and after blinding the patients' eyes, pretend by the aid of the spirits to draw the bones of fish or fowls out of their flesh. When the Dayaks are questioned as to their belief in these easily-exposed deceits, they say no; but the custom has descended to them from their ancestors, and they still pay these priests large sums to perform the ancient rites.

Though these priests are of course men, yet some pretend to be women, or rather dress as such, and like to be treated as females. In Lingga, however, out of thirty, only one has given up man's attire. Many of the priests are the blind and maimed for life, who by following this profession are enabled to earn a livelihood.

If a Dayak lose his wife, he gives a feast, which is really an offering to the departed spirit. After the death of relatives, they seek for the heads of enemies, and until one is brought in consider themselves to be in mourning, wearing no fine clothes, striking no gongs, nor is laughing or merry-making in the house allowed ; but they have a steady desire to grieve for the one lost to them, and to seek the head of an enemy, as a means of consoling themselves for the death of the departed.

Instances of warm affection are not rare. A Scribas chief came one day to Mr. Johnson to be comforted, as he was much afflicted by the loss of his wife, and cried bitterly when talking of her ; he spoke very affectingly and touched his listeners by his simple pathos. He said, according to the Dayak custom, if he had suffered this misfortune some years since, he should have instantly gone to the jungle in search of heads to avenge the death of his wife ; but now he knew it would do him no good, besides he had already heads in abundance, and plenty of wealth, none of which could alleviate his grief. He added :—" I look to the white men for everything : if they are not here I shall leave with them, as I have followed them so long, and now I cannot live in my house, everything looks so wretched.



I cannot eat, I cannot talk, and I seek for change. If I go about among the villages, I find myself among relations and see sights I have before seen, which recall the memory of my departed wife, therefore I wish to ask you to take me to England with you; or if you will not take me so far I will accompany you to Singapore, where I shall see many strange things." Mr. Johnson felt very much for him, and was pleased with the sincerity of his manner, as well as his not longing after the heads of enemies, which would have been but according to their ancient custom, and took him over to Singapore, which helped to change the current of his thoughts.

At the launching of a new boat, preparatory to head-hunting, the spirits presiding over it are appeased and fed, and the women collect in and about it chanting monotonous tunes, invoking the heavenly spirits to grant their lovers and husbands success in finding heads, by which they may remove their mourning and obtain a plentiful supply of the luxuries and necessities of life.

The principal sacrifice of the Sakarang Dayaks is killing a pig and examining its heart, which is supposed to foretell events with the utmost certainty. As an instance: should they find a dead animal on land prepared for a farm, according to their established custom, they should give it up, and commence a new one, but if the season for burning the jungle be passed, they endeavour to avert this loss by consulting the heart of a pig. The animal is sacrificed, and the greatest attention is given to the signs discovered upon his heart; if they be satisfactory, the farm land may be used, but if not it is completely abandoned.

After their great head-feasts, they also examine the hearts of pigs, and their gray-headed leaders surround and look extremely grave over the bleeding spectacle, which they one by one turn over with the point of a stick to examine the run and position of the veins; each as he does it offers some sapient remark, and the result generally is, that there are still numerous enemies, though far away, but however powerful these may be, they themselves are more powerful, and in the end will overcome them.

Not many years ago, Rentap, a pirate chief, who formerly resided in a stronghold on the summit of the Sadok mountain, took a Sakarang lad prisoner. Although one of his own race, he determined on putting him to death, remarking—"It has been our custom heretofore to examine the heart of a pig, but now we will examine a human one." The unfortunate boy was dragged about for some time by the hair of his head, and then put to death and his heart examined.

It is reported that many years ago a Sibuyau chief sacrificed some prisoners on the graves of two of his sons, who, in the same expedition, had been killed by his enemies.

To hear the cry of a deer is at all times considered unlucky, and to prevent the sound reaching their ears during a marriage procession gongs and drums are loudly beaten. On the way to their farms, should the unlucky omen be heard, they will return home and do no work for a day.

It is a very curious custom also, that if two men who have been at deadly feud, meet in a house, they

refuse to cast their eyes upon each other till a fowl has been killed and the blood sprinkled over them ; and, as already fully described, when two tribes make peace, after solemn engagements are concluded, a pig is killed, the blood of which is supposed to cement the bond of friendship.

They believe in a future state—considering that the *Simaŋgat*, or spiritual part of man, lives for ever, that they awake shortly after death in Sabayan or the future abode, and there find those of their relatives and friends who have departed before them. The Sibuyaús divide their Sabayan into seven distinct stories, which are occupied by the souls of the departed according to their rank and position in life. The really wicked occupy the lowest, but, whether happy or miserable, they acknowledge ignorance.

The Dayaks are very litigious, and few would have the patience to investigate one of their cases. The amateur lawyers of a tribe are acute in inquiry, quick in making retorts, and gifted with wonderful memories, generally referring to precedents of the customs of their forefathers in the settlement of fresh cases.

A head-feast consists in a general meeting of the tribe in the man's house who gives the entertainment. He prepares for it two or three months before it takes place, collecting fish, fowls, eggs, plantains, and other fruits, and in manufacturing an intoxicating drink from rice. When all these things are ready, poles are cut of various lengths, one for each of the heads that may be there to be rejoiced over ; there are also fantastically-shaped wooden birds, which make various evolutions in the house, and,

after the feast is over, are placed on the top of the before-mentioned poles, with their beaks turned in the direction of the enemies' country. The people, dressed in their best clothes, collect in the house, and commence the feast by all the youthful portion of the community engaging in cock-fighting—real cock-fights, too often with very formidable steel spurs. They are very partial to this amusement, and will go far and pay much for a good bird, and will bet heavily on a well-known cock.

After some hours engaged in this amusement, they commence drinking and eating, a part of the ceremony which does not entice the European stranger, nor can the peculiar smell increase his appetite. It is an extraordinary accumulation of food: fowls roasted with their feathers on, and then torn joint from joint; eggs black from age, decayed fruit, rice of all colours and kinds, strong-smelling fish, almost approaching a state of rottenness, and their drink having the appearance and the thickness of curds, in which they mix pepper and other ingredients. This has a sickening effect upon them, and they swallow it more as a duty than because they relish it. Before they have added any extraneous matter it has something of the taste of spruce beer.

They have then several processions, each headed by chiefs marching with grave countenances, and followed by a youthful crowd. Their movements are not graceful while parading about a house, as they put their bodies into the stiffest postures. The women also, adorned with trappings and beads of every colour, walk up and down, scattering yellow rice about the

house and on the heads of the men. The feast lasts three days and nights, and winds up by their becoming amicably intoxicated, always excepting the women, who do not drink, but take care of their drunken husbands and relatives. The feast is intended as an offering to Batara, on account of their success against enemies, and as a thanksgiving for a plentiful harvest. To fail in this testimony of gratitude would be grievous in their eyes. The Sea Dayaks follow the custom of Pamali, or taboo, and trust in omens.\* They also believe in the evil eye blasting their crops and destroying the produce of their gardens.

The practice of head-hunting has no doubt obtained among the Dayaks from the earliest times, and when carried on by the interior tribes very few lives were lost, but it much retarded the progress of the country, as it rendered life and property insecure. The Saka-rang and Seribas, within the memory of living men, were a quiet, inoffensive people, paying taxes to their Malay chiefs, and suffering much from their oppressive practices,—even their children being seized and sold into slavery. When the Malay communities quarrelled they summoned their Dayak followers, and led them on expeditions against each other. This accustomed the aborigines to the sea; and being found hard-working and willing men, the Malay and Lanun pirates took them out on their marauding expeditions, dividing the plunder—the heads of the killed for the Dayaks, the goods and captives for themselves.

Gradually the Dayaks began to feel their own strength and superiority of numbers. In their later

\* See chapter VI., on the "Social Life of the Land Dayaks."

expeditions the Malays have followed rather than led. The longing these Dayaks have acquired for head-hunting is surprising. They say, "The white men read books, we hunt for heads instead." Until the Sarawak Government curbed their proceedings they were known to coast down westward and southward as far as Pontianak, and occasionally they had been met forty miles out at sea in their rattan-tied boats, some of them seventy feet in length. In rough weather most of the crew jump overboard and hold on to the sides while the rest bale the boat out. They say, when this occurs in places suspected to be frequented by sharks, they each tie a bundle of tuba plant round their ancles to drive the devouring monsters away. The juice of the tuba is the one used to intoxicate fish.

About thirteen years ago, I heard the Natuna people give an account of a horrible transaction which took place in one of their islands. A party of Seribas Dayaks were cruising about among the little isles near, and had destroyed several women and many fishermen, when they were observed, towards evening, creeping into a deep and narrow inlet to remain concealed during the night. The islanders quietly assembled and surprised their enemies, killing all but seven, who were taken prisoners—six men and one lad. The former they roasted over a slow fire, and they declared that the bold fellows died without uttering a cry of pain, but defying them to the last; the lad, who stood trembling by, uncertain of his fate, was sent back to the coast with a message to his countrymen, that if they ever came there again, they would be all treated in the same way. This fearful warning

was sufficient to deter their seeking heads in that direction.

Parties of two and three sometimes went away for months on an inland incursion, carrying nothing with them but salt wrapped up in their waist-cloths, with which they seasoned the young shoots, and leaves, and palm cabbages, found in the forests; and when they returned home, they were as thin as scarecrows. It is this kind of cat-like warfare which causes them to be formidable enemies both to the Chinese and the Malays, who never feel themselves safe from a Dayak. They have been known to keep watch in a well up to their chins in water, with a covering of a few leaves over their heads, to endeavour to cut off the first person who might come that way. At night they would drift down on a log, and cut the rattan cable of trading prahus, while others of their party would keep watch on the bank, knowing well where the stream would take the boat ashore, and when aground they killed the men and plundered the goods.

An atrocious case happened many years ago up the Batang Lupar, where a young man started on an expedition by himself to seek for a head from a neighbouring tribe. In a few days he came back with the desired prize. His relatives questioned him how it was he had been away so few days, as they had never been able to perform the same journey in double the time. He replied gravely that the spirits of the woods had assisted him. About a month afterwards a headless trunk was discovered near one of their farms, and on inquiry being made, it was found to be the body of his victim, an old woman of their own tribe, not very

distantly related to the assassin himself. He was only fined by the chief of the tribe, and the head taken from him and buried.

If a large party intended starting under a leader of any note, they waited till he had first built a hut not far from the village, and listened for an omen from the cry of the birds. As soon as a good one was obtained, they started; and when a certain distance from home, stopped and held a consultation, in which they decided on the mode of attack, and how the heads, captives, and plunder should be divided. Large rivers intervening did not deter them, as they could always build boats, tying them together with rattans, each capable of holding about thirty men. On their return they hid the planks in the jungle, to be used on a future occasion.

Their formidable land expeditions are very carefully planned. When they invade an enemy's country the force is divided: a small party of picked men lead the advance of the army, and these are called the beak; then follows the main body, with wings on either side, and the whole is closed by a tail. On a retreat, the order is reversed, and the tail becomes the beak, still leaving the best men to face the following foe.

Their war boats are well constructed after good models, and very fast; some will hold as many as sixty or seventy men, with two months' provisions. The keel is flat, with a curve or sheer of hard wood. A long one does not exceed six fathoms, and upon it they will build a boat of eleven fathoms in length. The extra extent of planks, which overlap, is brought up with a sheer. They caulk the seams with a bark



which is plentiful in the jungle, and no other fastenings but rattans are used.

These boats are painted red and white—the former is generally an ochre, but occasionally they use a kind of red seed pounded; the white is simply lime, made from sea shells. In their expeditions they always take a supply of red ochre to eat, in case of becoming short of other provisions, and we once found in some deserted Seribas' prahus many packets of a white oleaginous clay used for the same purpose. The bark they employ for caulking is very tough, and beaten out, serves to make useful and comfortable coverlets, as well as waist-cloths and head-dresses.

I have mentioned that the possession of a head is necessary to enable the Dayaks to leave off mourning. I once met an old chief of Seribas, the most influential man in the country. He was dressed in nothing but a dirty rag round his loins, and thus he intended to remain until the mourning for his wife should be terminated by securing a head. Until this happened they could not marry again, or appease the spirit of the departed, which continued to haunt the house and make its presence known by certain ghostly rappings. They endeavoured to mollify its anger by the nearest relative throwing a packet of rice to it under the house every day, until the spirit was laid to rest by their being able to celebrate a head-feast: then the Dayaks forget their dead, and the ghosts of the dead forget them. When passing a burial-ground, however, they throw on it something which they consider acceptable to the departed.

In writing about head-hunting, I frequently employ the past tense, as all such portions of those

tribes, as have been brought under English influence, are rapidly losing these customs, and could any profitable agricultural industry be introduced among them, would soon expend their energies in money-making.

The Dayaks are exceedingly quick in commercial transactions, and most of them who did not know the value of a piece of money six years ago are now active traders. They are said to be more acute than Malays, so that even the Chinese find they cannot cheat them after the first year. They are hoarding, though liberal according to custom; but generally they are much disposed to be avaricious and close-fisted. The Malays sometimes make good bargains with them by using soft and flattering language, but the Dayaks often repent of being so wheedled, and will claim justice before the courts.

The Sea Dayaks, contrary to ancient custom, have the habit of keeping a few slaves, and are generally kind masters; but the system has been a very bad one, as many unfortunate people have become enslaved in consequence of the debts or the crimes of their parents or grand-parents. It is scarcely right to give the name of slaves to these people, as on the payment of the original debt or fine they become free.

They have no graven images, nor do they practise any outward or visible signs of idolatry, nor have they any mode of religious worship further than a solemn attention to superstitious practices and observances. Several Dayaks have an objection to eating the flesh of pigs, deer, and other animals; but it is because they are afraid of getting certain complaints,

as skin diseases, and the custom becomes hereditary, as many families are subject to them; or it arises from the fear of going mad; or as some married women tremble to touch deer's flesh previously to the birth of their firstborn; or because they have received warning in dreams not to touch a particular kind of food. Their religious opinions do not forbid them to eat the flesh of any animal.

The Sea Dayaks, however, would not intentionally kill a cobra, or many other species of snake, or a particular lizard, or owls, or any of their birds of omen. There are, also, certain animals and other birds which many families abstain from injuring; in some cases, owing to a dream; in others, to help traditionally received from them by an ancestor. It is forbidden for some Dayaks to kill a civet cat, an orang-utan, or an alligator; and they give such reasons as the following:—"One of my ancestors, a clever man, cured a sick alligator, and then they made an agreement that neither should injure the other." Another said, when his great-grandfather first settled at the hill of Banting, on the Lingga, the orang-utan abounded there. Their enemies once came to attack the place, but were repulsed by the assistance of the orang-utans, who crowded to the edge of the fruit groves to glare on the strangers, and were probably mistaken for men. As a reason for not destroying the cobra, they say, "It has always been forbidden, those who dream of them are lucky, and often do the great spirits put on the forms of snakes."

They sometimes change their names after severe sickness, when their priests recommend it on the

restoration of health. And, also, in the event of a slave becoming free, his late master gives a feast upon the occasion of manumitting him, and proclaims his freedom in public. They often present a spear upon the occasion, the meaning of which is that, if he be again claimed as a slave, the weapon may be used to put to death his former master.

It is contrary to custom for a man to marry a first cousin, who is looked upon as a sister. No marriage is allowed with aunt or niece, and some objection is made in a few of the communities to a man marrying a deceased wife's sister, or a woman taking her husband's brother; but these customs are not always followed, and I have heard of uncles marrying nieces, and a marriage with a deceased wife's sister is also permitted, provided her parents approve of the man; and it is then encouraged by them in order to bring up the children as one family.

Their priests have little or no knowledge of medicine, but trust, in most cases, to their occult sciences. The following ceremony is practised in order to restore health to an invalid. The patient is brought out into the verandah and placed in a chair by eight priests, two of whom being dressed in women's clothes. An umbrella is held aloft, and the priests commence walking round the chair, yelling to the utmost of their power. At each turn they place their hands on some portion of their bodies, that the spirit of the disease may abandon that part of the patient. They then seize the chair, and wheel about the sick man till all parties are exhausted. No wonder the unfortunates die!

In ordinary sickness the relatives are attentive, but not so, as I have said, when there is a sweeping epidemic, as small-pox ; in such cases they think it useless to strive against so formidable a spirit. When cholera was in the country, the Dayaks lost comparatively few, as they healed those taken with it by rubbing and warmth ; but the Malays appeared to have done everything they should not have done—drinking, when in health, nothing but hot water, taking no exercise, and only eating a little rice ; the consequence was they were, when seized, too weak to struggle with the complaint. The most successful system practised by the natives appears to have been to rub the stomach and limbs with cajput cil (kayu putih oil), and administer a strong dose of spirits as soon as the first symptoms were perceived. It is said a few drops of the oil are also given internally with success.

There is a peculiar disease from which many Dayaks often suffer. It can only be described as a general weakness, and continued loss of flesh. It probably arises from poor food and constant exposure to malaria, as well as to the dreadful smells which arise from the heaps of filth accumulated under their houses.

The women manufacture a coarse cloth ; making and dyeing their own yarn, beating out the cotton with small sticks, and, by means of a spinning-wheel, running it off very quickly. The yarn is not so fine as what they can buy of English manufacture, but it is stronger, and keeps its colour remarkably well, and no cloth wears better than Dayak cloth.

Their agricultural pursuits are limited in number, and with little labour the soil yields sufficient crops

to supply their wants.\* They plant rice once a year, and those who live on dry and high land have also cotton and tobacco. They grow enough sugar-cane for their own eating, not for making sugar ; and they are so eager for gain, that it would not be difficult to induce them to plant crops requiring only ordinary superintendence. They sow the cotton-seed after the rice harvest. Their agricultural instruments are strong swords, made by themselves from imported iron, employed for cutting grass or young jungle ; and a kind of small axe and adze in one, by turning the iron in its socket. This instrument they use in shaping out planks for boats, and for felling the larger trees, and, in their hands, it brings down the timber as fast as an English axe would in the hands of a backwoodsman. One method they adopt for getting rid of old jungle is this :—first of all, they clear away the underwood and the branches near the ground, then with their axes they cut the larger trees more than half through ; at last, choosing some giant of the forest, they fell it completely : in its fall it drags all the others after it, as they are connected together by twining creepers of great size and strength. It is a dangerous practice, and requires care to avoid the wide-spread fall, that comes to the earth with an awful crash.

They obtain bees'-wax from the nests built on the tapang tree, and climb the loftiest heights in search of it, upon small sticks, which they drive in as they ascend the noble stem which rises above a hundred feet free of branches, and whose girth varies from fifteen to five-and-twenty feet. When these pegs have

been driven in, their outer ends are connected by a stout rattan, which, with the tree, forms a kind of ladder.

It requires cool and deliberate courage to take a hive at so great an elevation, where, in case of being attacked by the bees, the almost naked man must fall and be dashed to atoms. They ascend at night, and depend much upon the flambeaux they carry up with them, as, when the man disturbs the hive, the sparks falling from the torches cause, it is said, the bees to fly down in chase of them, instead of attacking their real enemy, who then takes the hive and lowers it down by a rattan string. The bees escape unhurt. This plan does not appear to be so safe as that pursued by the Pakatan Dayaks, who kindle a large fire under the trees, and, throwing green branches upon it, raise so stifling a smoke that the bees rush forth, and the man ascending takes their nest in safety. Both these operations are generally conducted at night, although the second might be, I imagine, practised in safety during the day.

There is a custom existing among the Dayaks of the Batang Lupar which I have not heard of elsewhere. Beside one of the paths in the Undup district there are several heaps of sticks, and in other places, of stones, called "tambun bula," or lying heaps. Each heap is in remembrance of some man who has told a stupendous lie, or disgracefully failed in carrying out an engagement; and every passer-by takes a stick or a stone to add to the accumulation, saying, at the time he does it, "For So-and-so's lying heap." It goes on for generations, until they sometimes forget

who it was that told the lie, but, notwithstanding that, they continue throwing the stone.

At another place, near many cross roads, there is a tree on which are hung innumerable pieces of rag; each person passing tears a little bit of cloth from his costume, and sticks it there. They have forgotten the origin of this practice, but fear for their health if they neglect it. One Dayak observed, "It is like that custom of some European nations giving passports to those who enter or leave their country." If this be a true explanation, it is, perhaps, to give the spirits of the woods notice who have passed that way, and the Dayak's observation shows how quick they are, and how well they remember what they have heard.

They practise various ordeals; among others, two pieces of native salt, of equal weight, are placed in water, and that appertaining to the guilty party melts immediately; the other, they affirm, keeps its form; but, in fact, the one that disappears first proves the owner to be in the wrong. Another ordeal is with two land shells, which are put on a plate and lime-juice squeezed upon them, and the one that moves first shows the guilt or innocence of the owner, according as they have settled previously whether motion or rest is to prove the case. They talk of another, where the hand is thrust into boiling water or oil, and innocence is proved by no injury resulting. The favourite ordeal, however, is dipping the head under water, and the first who puts up his face to breathe loses the case.

I need only observe, concerning their language, that the Sibuyaus, the Balaus, the Undups, the Batang Lupars, the Sakarangs, the Seribas, and those inhabi-



tants of the Rejang living on the Kanowit and Katibas branches, all speak the same language, with no greater modifications than exist between the English spoken in London and Somersetshire. They are, in fact, but divisions of the same tribe, and the differences that are gradually growing up between them principally arise from those who frequent the towns and engage in trade, using much Malay in their conversation, and allowing their own words to fall into disuse. The agricultural inhabitants of the farther interior are much more slowly influenced.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE KAYANS OF BARAM.

IN April, 1851, the steamer *Pluto*, Acting Commander Brett, arrived in Sarawak with directions to take me on an official visit to Brunei and Baram. Sarawak was at that time suffering from one of those unaccountable panics which occasionally seize on both large and small communities. The report was that a French fleet lay outside preparing to attack the place. People packed up their valuables, and some even carried them off to the forest. The report probably originated in the fact that news of the recent destruction of the capital of Sulu by the Spaniards having by this time spread over the Archipelago had been distorted in various ways.

Starting from Sarawak, we steered our course along the north-west coast to the island of Labuan. On a bright, starlight night, while sitting on the bridge of the vessel, we were startled by the cry of a "man overboard." To stop the steamer, pull the trigger that disengaged the flaming life-buoy, and to let down the boats, did not take many minutes, and they soon pushed off from the sides. While we stood on the deck with strained attention, a sharp cry was heard; then there was a dead silence, followed immediately by

the sound of the oars in the rowlocks as the men gave way towards the life-buoy that was seen floating astern like a bright torch dancing on the waves. We thought we heard another fainter cry, but the mind in great tension will imagine these things. We could distinguish amid the sound of splashing water the distant shouts of the men as the crews hailed each other, but no answer was given to our captain's eager inquiries, as the rustling of the wind in our rigging, and those varied sounds which ever will arise around a ship lying to, drowned his voice. The anxiety of all was intense as the boats pulled back, and a sickening feeling came over us all when we found that their search had been unavailing. Either strength had failed the man, or a shark had seized him before he could reach the life-buoy. The passionate grief of the son of the drowned Portuguese now struck painfully on our ears, and I was not sorry to gain the refuge of the inner cabin.

In sailing along this coast, fine fish and small sharks are often caught by hook and line trailing out far behind vessels. The Tañgiri fish is perhaps the finest: the usual size obtained varies from three to five feet, and it has something of the look of a salmon, but without its richness of flavour. We have caught also many young sharks, but all under five feet; in fact, anything larger would carry away the bait, hook, and all. Young shark is often eaten, both by Malays and Chinese; I have tasted it, and thought it very coarse, but at sea even that change is palatable.

The shores between Sarawak and Baram point are the least beautiful of the north-west coast. Scarcely any but hills far in the interior are seen, and the land

is either flat or gently undulating hill and dale, with few distinctive features. However, in the depth of the great bay lying between Points Sirik and Baram, near the river of Bintulu, there are some fine mountains; and once, during a very clear day, I thought I saw a far distant peak, which might be that of Tilong, according to native report, higher than Kina Balu. Bintulu is now the northern boundary of the territories of Sarawak.

Although I have said the appearance of this coast is not picturesque, yet in the eye of one who looks to commercial and agricultural advantages, it is satisfactory. Broad plains of alluvial soil, as rich, perhaps, as any in the world, and a fine succession of swelling hill and dale, afford some compensation to one who looks upon this coast as capable of as much development as a similar space in Java.

Between Bintulu and Baram there are two remarkable serrated mountains—Siluŋgan and Lambir; but in this ninety miles of coast one small village only is to be found, and unless you penetrate far into the interior, there are but a few wandering Punans and others who inhabit it.

Baram is a dangerous point to ships, as it lies low, and the sea shoals rapidly. Here in the rainy season the fresh water rushes out with so much force, as to carry it unmixed four or five miles from land, where native prahus often take in their supplies. Large trunks of trees brought down from the interior are continually floating about, very dangerous to small vessels, and many a Malay trader has owed to them his ruin. Off Sirik Point a prahu struck and imme-

diately sunk. Her captain reported a rock, but as the coast near was simply alluvial deposit, and the fishermen who frequent this spot have never found it, he must have suffered from a submerged tree.

I was once a passenger on board a frigate while she sailed by this point. We were sitting below, and heard her distinctly strike, when a grating sound as of crushed coral was audible. "On shore again," was the general observation: we went on deck, to find her running before the wind at ten knots an hour. We had, I believe, simply passed over one of these huge trunks.

Although my object was to visit the Baram river, yet I was obliged to pass on to Labuan and Brunei to obtain interpreters and guides. The coast line between Baram and Brunei is very pretty. As we approach the capital, the interminable jungle gives way to grassy hills, with a park-like distribution of timber. Curling wreaths of smoke rising from the shaded valleys, told us that the inhabitants were numerous. In the far distance we could see the great mountain of Molu, the loftiest known, except Kina Balu: the latter was visible to-day, although about 120 miles off, and looked like a huge table mountain rising from the sea, all intervening ground being lost in the distance.

We reached Labuan the day before the Queen's birthday, in time to be present at the official dinner given by Governor Scott. I shall take another opportunity to notice this island.

We heard on our arrival that Mr. Low, the Colonial treasurer, had made an attempt to reach the summit of Kina Balu. It was generally said he had failed;

but many years after, I was able to prove that he had reached to within a few hundred feet of the very highest peaks.

After some days' stay to coal, we started for the capital, which lies about thirty-three miles to the S.S.W. The bay opposite Labuan is one of the most striking on the coast. The mountains commence within a few miles of the shore, and tower in successive ranges to Brayong, and Si Guntang, about 8,000 feet in height.

By naval men this is called Thunder-and-Lightning Bay, and it well deserves the name, as scarcely a day passes without some heavy squall sweeping down from the mountains, while the brightest lightning flashes, and the thunder rolls and re-echoes among the hills.

The entrance to the inner bay, into which so many rivers pour their waters, is five fathoms, and with a little care as to the known marks, of easy entrance. To the right is the low island of Muara, reputed deadly; but I have stayed there many times, and none of my people suffered from fever. Keeping along the southern shore of the island, the channel is reached, and as we approach the true entrance of the Brunei river the scenery becomes lovely.

To the right is the island of Inġaran, with its remains of Spanish batteries; to the left, picturesque Chermin. No ship of any size can enter the river, as eight feet at low water, and fourteen at high, is what the bar affords, which is also rendered more difficult by a long artificial dam of stones thrown across the stream in former times to prevent the

approach of hostile squadrons.' The water, however, has forced an angular passage to the right, through which vessels are obliged to pass. It is one of the worst rivers for commercial purposes in Borneo.

Beautiful hills rise sharply from the banks, some wooded, with clumps of lofty palms pushing their way up through the jungle, while others are cleared, presenting swelling grassy summits and green slopes. Before us the honoured hill of Sei rises and forms, as it were, an abrupt termination of the river. The Borneans take a pride in this hill, which overshadows their town, although its elevation is but 700 feet.

Turning sharply to the right, we saw the first houses of the capital of Borneo, by the natives called Dar'u'salam, or the Abode of Peace, and which has been truly described as the "Venice of hovels." The salt-water creek or river here expands to a small lake, and on mud-banks are the houses, built on the slenderest of piles—mere palms, that rot in three years. Slow, sluggish, and muddy, the water passes underneath, to leave, at ebb tide, exposed banks emitting the most offensive effluvia, which turn the gold and silver of uniforms to the colour of dirt.

As soon as we had anchored, the steamer was surrounded by a crowd of canoes, some so small as scarcely to float a child of five years of age—in fact, but a hollowed log. Mothers, however, do not fear to trust their children in them, as they swim like fishes. It is a saying in Siam, which would be as applicable in Brunei, that their children can do three things at a tender age—swim, smoke, and suck. I once saw a

child at the breast, but with one eye fixed on his brothers paddling in the water; presently it gave a crow of delight, and leaving its mother's arms, sprang into the river to enjoy the fun. He was not more than three years old.

The whole town appeared to be interested in our arrival, for, as we passed up the broad and deep channel between the lines of houses, crowds of men, women, and children thronged the verandahs.

The floating market mentioned by Forrest was there also—several hundred canoes, each containing one or two women, covered over with mat hats a yard in diameter, floated up and down about the town, pulling through the water-lanes and resting for a while in the slack tide at the back of the houses. These women, generally ill-favoured old slaves, frequent this migratory assemblage every day, and buy and sell fowls, vegetables, fish, and fruit.

The supply of food for this population of five-and-twenty thousand requires some arrangement: so every morning a market is held at various points, where the hill people assemble and exchange their agricultural produce for salt, fish, iron, and cloths. The old women are diligent frequenters of these places, and buy there to retail in the capital.

I have often come across these extemporized markets: some held under groves of fruit-trees, others on grassy fields, but, by choice or accident, always in a lovely spot.

We had not long been anchored when the Sultan and ministers sent messengers on board, to inquire the news and invite me to a meeting. They were very



anxious about the result of my visit to the Kayans, as there is little doubt that this slave-acquiring and head-hunting people are destroying the interior population.

Intelligence had just reached them that three long war-boats of their enemies had been dragged over into the waters of the upper Limbang, that they had attacked a party of the Sultan's Murut subjects, and killed six, after which they had immediately returned to their own country. It is evident that the Borneans are in great fear of the ultimate result of these forays. The old Sultan being ill, I did not see him, but spent the evening with pañgeran Mumein, the prime minister (and present Sultan). He is an amiable man, and bears a better character than the rest; his great fault is avarice. He is always telling the story of his fight with the Kayans, which exemplifies how easy these men may be defeated by the use of musketry. Some years since, pañgeran Mumein hearing that the district of Tamburong was invaded by the people of Baram, collected his followers and guns, and proceeded thither. When they came in sight of the Kayans crowded round a village, the Malays became alarmed, and wished to retreat, but their leader sprang forward and fired a brass swivel at the enemy, it fortunately took effect on one, and the crowd dispersed. Recovering from their fright, the Borneans fired volley after volley into the jungle, and celebrated their victory by loud beatings of gongs and drums. The Kayans, still more frightened, fled in all directions.

Pañgeran Mumein justly observed, that as long as the Kayans were unacquainted with the use of firearms,

it would be easy to defend the country ; but that as the Bornean traders were supplying them with brass swivels and double-barrel guns, he thought the ruin of Brunei was at hand. However, though the Kayans are now less frightened at the noise of heavy guns and muskets than formerly, they seldom employ them in their expeditions in the jungle, as they are difficult to be kept in working order.

With the assistance of his followers' memories, Mumein repeated the names of forty villages destroyed within the last ten years, and the majority of the inhabitants captured or killed.

Several of the respectable Malay traders of the place agreed to go with me as guides and interpreters, among the rest Gadore, Abdul Ajak, and Bakir, the principal dealers with Baram. Bakir had but just arrived from that country, and he said that the Kayans were anxiously awaiting my arrival, having heard that I was ready for the steamer.

We pulled in the evening to visit the fine upas-tree growing at the end of the reach below the town. We landed at a Mohamedan burying-place, and there met a Malay, who warned us not to approach this deadly tree, but we smilingly thanked him and continued our course, forcing our way through the tangled bushes at its base : it has a noble stem, some five-and-thirty feet without a branch, and eighteen feet in circumference ; the colour of its bark is a light brown. The upas is a very handsome and spreading tree, and its bright rich green contrasted well with the dark foliage beyond.

Leaving the burying-ground, we dropped down the

river a hundred yards, and then walked up a path leading over the hills, where a dip renders the passage easier. Arriving at the summit, we saw the town spread out, map-like, before us, and it is one of the loveliest scenes I have ever witnessed. The sun was just setting amid a broken heap of clouds, and threw its dimmed rays on everything around. The river, slowly meandering through the town and country, flowed past our feet, its rippled waters faintly tinged with purple; while around, till hidden by the now rapidly-approaching darkness, we could perceive a succession of hills, gilded here and there, and generally clothed with trees to the very summit, but, that the eye might not be wearied, many an eminence was grass-covered. A cool breeze blew gently down the river, and was pleasantly refreshing after the hot day.

Before darkness had quite enveloped us, we visited those little grottoes whence the Borneans obtain their supplies of drinking water. Rills running down the sides of the steep hills are led through bamboo-pipes, and brought conveniently to fill the jars that crowd the numerous boats, each waiting its turn. Brunei water is famous; it runs through a sandstone district, and is very clear and tasteless. One of these places is called to this day "The Factor's Fountain," and brings back to one's mind the time when the East India Company had a factory there, and traded in pepper.

Having collected our Bornean guides, who vainly endeavoured to load the steamer with their trading goods, we bade adieu to the authorities and started for Labuan, where we stayed but a few hours, and then steamed away to the westward for the Baram.

Next morning we arrived off the mouth, and, by not steering towards land till the northern point of the river bore due east, came in with one-and-a-half fathoms water. The natives say there is a deeper channel to be found by keeping close in to the northern shore, but it has not yet been completely surveyed. A fresh breeze was blowing, which curled the waves and dashed them in breakers on the sandbank, so that our passage was made in a sea of foam. This obstruction renders the river comparatively useless, and is greatly to be regretted, as no sooner is the bar passed than the water deepens to four and five fathoms, and occasionally no bottom was found with a ten-fathom line.

At the mouth, the width of the Baram is about half a mile, it gradually narrows, and then varies in breadth from 300 to 500 yards. Causarians line the entrance, then nipa palms, and farther up the usual jungle pressing closely to the water's edge. A few miles more, and patches of rich, short grass ornament the banks, increasing in number as we advanced. The jungle presented a few varied tints, but pretty creepers and white and red flowers occasionally showed themselves among the dark leaves.

About twenty miles up the river was a landing-place on the right bank, leading to the Blait country, inhabited by Muruts, who have suffered heavily by the attacks of the Kayans.

Makota, the Malay noble so often mentioned in Keppell's *Voyage of the Dido*, as the chief opponent of European influence in Borneo, and certainly the ablest and most unscrupulous man, and yet the most agreeable companion I have found among the Malays, told

me how the Kayans had managed to obtain a village of Muruts in the Blait country. It had often been attacked, but, as it was defended by a strong stockade, the inhabitants had defied the enemy.

One day, a fugitive party of three men and several women and children were seen flying from the jungle towards the Murut village. Some armed men went out to meet them, and they said that they had run away from the Kayans, and were now escaping pursuit. They proved to be Muruts of a distant river, who had been captured and held in slavery by the Kayans. The Blaits received them with hospitality, and offered them room in their long village houses, which contained 150 families. The fugitives, however, said they preferred keeping their party together, and asked leave to build up a temporary hut against the inner side of the stockade. Permission having been granted, they lived there six months, working at a rice plantation with their hosts.

One of these men, after the gathering in of the harvest, stayed out till sunset, and explained it by saying he had been hunting, and that the chase had led him farther than he intended. It was a dark night that followed, and, about four in the morning, a large party of Kayans crawled quietly up to the stockade, and found an entrance prepared for them, the posts having been removed by the stranger Muruts, who had gradually cut through the wood forming the inner wall of their temporary shed. When sufficient were within the defences, a loud shout was raised, and fire applied to the leaf houses. The villagers rushed out to be cut down or captured. In the confusion and

darkness, however, the larger portion escaped, but left about a hundred and fifty bodies and captives in the hands of the Kayans; and I am not sorry to add, among the former were the three treacherous men who had caused this awful scene. Some of the attacking party not obtaining heads, quietly possessed themselves of those of their three allies.

Kum Lia, a Kayan chief, planned and led this foray. I had some doubts of the truth of this circumstantially told story, but many years after, meeting Kum Lia in daily intercourse, I asked him about it. He was proud to acknowledge that he was the author of the able stratagem, but was not clear as to whether they had also slain their allies, though he thought it very possible that his followers had done so.

At sunset we passed the island of Bakong, divided by narrow waters from the shore, and along its banks grass grew luxuriantly. We were struck by the appearance of dark objects; and, seeing them move, telescopes were pointed, and they proved to be a herd of tambadau, or wild cattle, and at the edge of the jungle was a group of deer.

We anchored at the entrance of the Bakong stream, about thirty-five miles from the mouth of the Baram. During the night careful observations were made, and it was found that at the height of the flood the river rose only three feet, and the strength of the current averaged only one mile per hour.

Started before sunrise; the stream continues much the same. At first there were more open glades, with rich soft-looking grass like our English meadows, where traces of wild cattle and deer were constantly to be

observed. The river was seldom above four hundred yards in breadth, but never less than two ; the soundings changed from three fathoms to no bottom with the usual line, but this great variation was caused by our not always being able to keep in the deepest part of the stream.

A glance at the map, in the second volume, will show how very abrupt are the turnings, and how the stream doubles on itself, rendering it a very difficult matter to steer. Occasionally the current would catch the bow of the steamer, and force it on the shore ; but immediately the stern felt the same force, it was pressed also towards the bank, and the stem again would point up stream, and it was at last found that this was the easiest and safest mode of turning the sharp points.

We steamed by several Malay trading prahus pulling up the stream, and observed one enormous Tapang tree rising close to the water's edge.

Early in the afternoon we passed the embouchure of the Tingjir on the left bank, about a third of the size of the Baram, and said to be shallow : it is well inhabited by a tribe of people called Sububs, with whom the Kayans are interspersed. A couple of hours after, reached the Tutu on the right bank ; up which the Kayans proceed when intent on a foray in the Limbang country.

Saw the first Kayans near this spot. Two canoes were coming down the river, but when their crews perceived the moving monster approaching, they turned and fled, and finding we were overtaking them, deserted their canoes and dashed ashore. Three men, however,

remained at the edge of the jungle, and we reassured them by waving our handkerchiefs. It was a pardonable fear, as they had never before seen anything larger than their own war boats.

We had one fine view of the peak of Molu and of its surrounding ranges; occasionally the banks are becoming steep.

Anchored after sunset, above one hundred miles from the mouth; we were now far beyond the influence of the tides, yet the current averaged but a mile and a half.

Again started before sunrise, the river continuing its winding course with a few patches of greensward; according to our guides there were no more wild cattle, but many deer in this neighbourhood. We passed the sites of numerous deserted plantations and of a few new ones: we startled the people at one farmhouse by running our bowsprit into their verandah, no wonder the women and children fled shrieking to the jungle.

Most of these habitations are built on high posts, and very neatly constructed. Generally, the people showed little fear, but crowded the verandahs to look at us, some rushing to their boats to follow. We again found a little difficulty in rounding the sharp points, and were constantly striking the banks, but no damage was done, although we were often among the overhanging branches of the jungle.

We touched once, while near the centre of the stream, on what I do not know, probably a rock or a stump of a tree—the snags of the American rivers. But just above this spot was the abrupt hill of Gading, rising perpendicularly from the banks, and brightly



white, with deep fissures, and celebrated for its birds'-nest caves. I am sorry we did not stop to examine this, as many years after I found among the Muruts of the centre of Northern Borneo, a small slab of white marble, which I could only trace as having been brought from the Baram river. The Malays called it Batu Gading, or ivory-stone: it was pure white.

The banks of the Baram gradually became higher, and topped by neat farmhouses, increased in beauty; but I think the first view of the Kayan town of Lañgusin one of the most picturesque I have ever witnessed. Long houses, built on lofty posts, were scattered on hills of various heights, yet appearing to be clustered together, while near were numerous little rice stores, neatly whitewashed. We steered on, until we reached a long village-house, still building, opposite which we anchored. Crowds immediately assembled on the banks, and the Bornean traders came off to give and receive news.

The chief, Tāmawan, now sent to know how the salutes were to be arranged, and we agreed that as usual we should salute his flag first, and that he should return it. We were rather surprised to find an English ensign hoisted, but he had received it from a trader, and said he would never change it, as it showed his good feeling towards us.

Among the guns fired was the pivot 32-pounder, and the sound echoed and re-echoed among the neighbouring hills, startling the whole population, who had never before heard anything louder than a brass swivel. The salute was returned by an irre-

gular firing, which continued for about an hour—the greater number of guns, the greater honour.

My Malay followers were very desirous that I should assume the utmost dignity, and require the chiefs of the river to make the first visit; but on that point I declined insisting, leaving it to the Kayans to settle. Thinking it would show more confidence, I went on shore while these preliminaries were discussing, and walked to the spot where all the principal men were assembled under a temporary shed. Two chairs and two boxes covered with English rugs were arranged at one end. Before taking my seat, I shook hands with all around. This was a formal meeting, and I explained to them the object of our coming, which was to cement the friendship of the English with the Kayans. Having just arrived from the Kanowit, I was enabled to give them some intelligence of their friends and relations. In fact, I found Kum Nipa's son-in-law here, and also Diŋgun, the Kanowit chief's brother, and I had the unpleasant task of informing them that small-pox had broken out on the Rejang, and was committing fearful ravages. I did not tell the latter of the death of his younger brother by Kayan hands, as it might prove disagreeable to be informed of it publicly.

I did not stay long, as they appeared to be uneasy, but with general assurances of friendship left them.

It is difficult to describe the outward appearance of these people, and say anything different from what I have already said in describing the Sea Dayaks. They are much like the Sakarangs, except that they are slightly tatooed with a few stars and other marks.

Diñgun came on board to hear more particular news of his family, and was shocked on being informed of the death of his brother : he told me he should return home in about five months. Two years ago, he and a party of thirty started from Kanowit, and proceeded up the Rejang, amusing themselves with the Kayans, they then pushed on and crossed over to Baram, where they had remained guests of the principal chiefs. He and his companions were easily distinguished from their neighbours by their profuse tatooing. I was enabled to give him some information about his father, his brothers, and his four children ; about his wife, I do not remember that he inquired.

Along the banks of the river, we observed many Kayan graves : the body is wrapped up, enclosed within a hollowed coffin, and raised on two thick, carved posts, with roughly executed woodwork extending out from each corner, like those seen on the roofs of Buddhist temples. In one they put so many goods that the Bornean traders were tempted to rob them, and had not the Kayans discovered who were the culprits, the rest would have suffered heavily. The Bornean thieves escaped, but they and all their connections are for ever precluded from trading with this district.

The Baram is said to abound in alligators, but they were evidently not very dangerous, as the women and children bathed daily opposite the ship. Strength of current, two knots per hour.

Next morning, the chiefs came on board. I will give their names as a curiosity :—Tamawan, Siñgauding, Kum Lia, the hero of the Blait surprise, Si

Matau, Loñgapan, and Longkiput, with some hundreds of followers. They were charmed to be allowed freely to inspect the vessel. Tamawan looked a savage, and doubtless was one: he had on but little dress—a waistcloth of about two fathoms of gray shirting, a handkerchief tossed over his shoulder, and a head-dress of dark cloth. He was but slightly tatooed, having a couple of angles on his breast, a few stars on his arms, his hands as far as the joints of his fingers, and a few fanciful touches about his elbows; his ears were bored and then drawn down by leaden weights, as is the fashion among the Kanowits; the tops of his ears were also bored, and the long teeth of the tiger-cat stuck through them like a pair of turned-down horns. And such was the dress and appearance of nearly all but a few young men, who wore jackets of a variety of colours, with an equal variety of trimmings. Tamawan was a small man, but Simatau and Siñgauding were hulking fellows; they were all strong or wiry-looking men, capable of much fatigue; their countenances, on the whole, were pleasant. I took them down to inspect the machinery, and my Bornean followers were their guides to show them all the other wonders on board, particularly the large 32-pounder gun, which greatly excited their respect. Kum Lia, who is the son-in-law of Kum Nipa, of Rejang, whom I have mentioned as the chief we intended to visit, when we were stopped by the small-pox having broken out in his country, stayed after the others to inquire about his family. He remembered the name of Niblett, who commanded the *Phlegethon* when it called at Bintulu in 1847.

In the evening I visited Siñgauding at his house. I should have liked to take up my residence on shore, but they were desirous to make so many preparations that I gave up the idea as our stay would necessarily be short, although I was anxious to observe them more closely.

Our talk was at first about steamers, balloons, and rockets, of which they had heard much from the Borneans. They particularly wished to know if we had a telescope that could discover the hidden treasures of the earth, as they had heard we possessed one that showed mountains in the moon.

I was unfortunate in the medium through which I obtained my information. The Bornean interpreters were only anxious on the subject of trade ; and being Mohamedans always laughed at the superstitions of the wild tribes. I therefore give, with some hesitation, what they told me concerning the Kayan religion. They said the name of their god was Totaduñgan, and he was the supreme ruler who created, and now reigns over all, that he had a wife, but no children ; beneath him were many other inferior powers. They believed in a future life, with separate places for the souls of the good and of the bad, that their heaven and hell were divided into many distinct residences, that those who died from wounds, from sickness, or were drowned, went each to separate places. If a woman died before her husband, she went to the other world and married. On the death of her husband, if he came to the same world, she repudiated her ghostly partner and returned to him who had possessed her on earth.

Siñgauding's house was of a similar construction to

those of the Sea Dayaks, very long, with a broad, covered verandah, as a public room, and a sleeping-place for the bachelors, while off it were separate apartments for the married people, the young girls, and children. The roof was of shingle, the posts of heavy wood, the flooring of long and broad rough planks, the partitions of the same material, with small doors about two feet above the floor, leading into the inner rooms.

Every Kayan chief of consideration possesses a kind of seat formed from the Tapang. It is, in fact, a huge slab, cut out of the buttress of that lofty tree, and this seat descends from father to son, till it is polished and black with age. Siñgauding gave me one, measuring ten feet six inches by six feet six inches. It was made into a very handsome dining-table, but was unfortunately burnt during the Chinese insurrection of 1857. When Siñgauding heard of this, he determined to send me another that should throw the former into the shade, and I heard that the one selected was fifteen feet by nine. Up to August, 1861, it had not reached me, as all the Malay traders declared their boats were too small to receive it.

Near the spot where we sat conversing were open baskets, hung near the fire-places, containing the human heads they had taken during their forays. The house certainly did not look cheerful; but I saw it under unfavourable circumstances—a dark evening, with constant drizzling rain.

As yet, I had seen but the few women who bathed opposite to the ship. They were generally tatooed from the knee to the waist, and wore but a cloth like a

handkerchief hung round the body, and tucked in at one side above the hip, leaving a portion of the thigh visible. When bathing, their tatooing makes them appear as if they were all wearing black breeches. They were tolerable-looking women, and I saw a few pleasant countenances.

The visit of the steamer was not timed very fortunately, as Tamadin, an influential chief, with a large party, was away head-hunting, and a rumour had arrived of a very severe loss having been suffered by a force that started for the interior of the Limbang and Trusan rivers. If we could stay twenty days we should see all the population, but I have had a hint that the provisions are running short, and nothing can be procured here but a few pigs, fowls, and goats, all very dear.

I have calculated the population of this town, called Lañgusin, at 2,500 souls, and this is perhaps under the mark, and from my inquiries I infer that the interior is well peopled.

At ten o'clock at night, the shouts and yells of the Kayans on shore were borne to us, as they were working with might and main to finish the long village-house of Tamawan. He gave them some drink, and they worked half the night.

They showed me some very pretty mats made by the wandering tribe of Punans, who live on jungle produce, and collect honey and wax.

Next day I sent some presents to Siñgauding and Tamawan, and at their special invitation went ashore to meet them. A large temporary shed sheltered us from the sun. There was no inconvenient crowding,

not more than a hundred men being assembled, and about twenty women, the wives and daughters of their chiefs. Among them there were some interesting girls, who wore their long black hair quite loose, only white fillets being bound round the forehead, so as to cast the hair in heavy masses over their ears and down their backs. Their countenances were open, bright dark eyes, smooth foreheads, depressed noses, clear skin, but indifferent mouths. They had good figures and well set up busts. I have as yet seen no old women or men in the tribe.

One of the objects of my visit was to inquire into the alleged misconduct of an English trader and of a Sarawak Malay. I spent two hours in the investigation. When this was over, native arrack and some of my French brandy were introduced. About a third of a tumbler of the former was handed to me, and as I raised it to my lips, the whole assembly burst out into what appeared to be a drinking chorus, and this they did when any man of note drank. A little spirit getting into them, they became more cheerful and amusing, and we talked about their head-hunting propensities. The wholesome advice I felt compelled to give them on this subject made them feel thirsty, and Tamawan seizing a bottle, filled two tumblers two-thirds full of raw spirit and handed one to me, and asked me to drink with him to the friendship of the two nations. Could I refuse? No. I raised the tumbler to my lips, and amid a very excited chorus allowed the liquor to flow down.

When this was finished, Tamawan jumped up, and while standing burst out into an extempore song, in



which Sir James Brooke and myself, and last, not least, the wonderful steamer, were mentioned with warm eulogies, and every now and then the whole assembly joined in chorus with great delight.

Tamawan now sat down and talked about head-hunting again. He said that when the Kayans attacked a village, they only killed those who resisted or attempted to escape; the rest they brought home with them, turning them in fact into field slaves. He declared, however, that his great village, and twenty-one more, were averse to the practice of head-hunting, but that over the twenty-eight other villages he had no influence. The above forty-nine villages he went over by name, and mentioned likewise the principal chief in each. They asserted that a village was considered small that had only a hundred families, while a large one contained four hundred. If we may judge from the account he gave of the town opposite which we were anchored, he must have underrated considerably. He said this contained two hundred families, but after going over the numbers in each village-house, we came to the conclusion that there were at least five hundred families in Lañgusin. But as long as head-hunting is considered an honourable pursuit, and the acquisition of Murut slaves enables the chiefs to live without labour, it will be impossible to put a stop to their forays.

Tamawan had excited himself on this subject, and again feeling very thirsty after all the information he had given me, looked about for something to drink. I was beginning to congratulate myself on its being finished, when he spoke to a very pretty girl who was

standing near, and she instantly disappeared to return with a couple of bottles of brandy in her hands. The two tumblers were again filled more than half-full—one for me, the other for himself. I remembered what Sydney Smith said of the little effect spirit often has on the temperate man, and joined him in this last pledge. I pitied the poor Malays, who had never been accustomed to anything stronger than tea, being forced to follow our example; and yet it was ridiculous to watch their contortions and wry faces, as their inexorable hosts forced them to swallow their allowance.

Now came a ceremony new to me: a young pig was brought in by the pretty waiting-maid and handed over to one of the men present, who bound its legs, and carrying it out opposite to where the *Pluto* was anchored, placed it on the ground. Mats were laid around, and a chair was provided for me. Tamawan then came forward and commenced an oration. His voice was at first thick from the potency of his previous draughts, but warming on his subject, he entered at large on the feelings of friendship with which he regarded the English, spoke of the wonderful vessel that came with oars of fire, seized my hand, and gesticulated excitedly with the other; then pointing to the pig, he entered on what appeared to be a prayer, as he seemed appealing to something beyond him; he took a knife, and cut the pig's throat; the body was then opened, and the heart and liver taken out and placed on two leaves, and closely examined, to judge from their appearance whether our visit would be fortunate for the Kayan nation.

Every chief present felt their different proportions, and Tamawan pointed out to me the various indications. Luckily for our friendship, they found that every portion portended good fortune. With his bloody hand Tamawan grasped mine, and expressed his delight at the happy augury. Throwing away the auricle of the heart, they cut up the rest to eat, and placed the pieces over the fire, using a bambu as a cooking vessel.

I now took my leave, rather tired with my four hours' exertions, and returned on board. The ceremony of examining the heart and liver of the pig was too classical not to merit particular notice, though I have already mentioned that the Sakarang Dayaks practise the same.

Next day being Sunday, the Malays kept the Kayans from coming on board. I inquired particularly as to the meaning of Tamawan's address, and heard that it was an invocation to the spirits of good and evil to allow him to discover from the heart of the sacrifice whether our visit was to prove fortunate or not to the Kayan nation.

Siñgauding sent on board to request me to become his brother by going through the sacred custom of imbibing each other's blood. I say imbibing, because it is either mixed with water and drunk, or else is placed within a native cigar and drawn in with the smoke. I agreed to do so, and the following day was fixed for the ceremony. It is called Berbiang by the Kayans; Bersabibah by the Borneans. I landed with our party of Malays, and after a preliminary talk, to give time for the population to assemble, the affair

commenced. We sat in the broad verandah of a long house, surrounded by hundreds of men, women, and children, all looking eagerly at the white stranger who was about to enter their tribe. Stripping my left arm, Kum Lia took a small piece of wood, shaped like a knife-blade, and slightly piercing the skin, brought blood to the surface; this he carefully scraped off: then one of my Malays drew blood in the same way from Siñgauding, and a small cigarette being produced, the blood on the wooden blades was spread on the tobacco. A chief then arose, and walking to an open place, looked forth upon the river and invoked their god and all the spirits of good and evil to be witness of this tie of brotherhood. The cigarette was then lighted, and each of us took several puffs, and the ceremony was concluded. I was glad to find that they had chosen the form of inhaling the blood in smoke, as to have swallowed even a drop would have been unpleasant, though the disgust would only arise from the imagination. They sometimes vary the custom, though the variation may be confined to the Kiniahs, who live farther up the river, and are intermarried with the Kayans. There a pig is brought and placed between the two who are to be joined in brotherhood. A chief addresses an invocation to the gods, and marks with a lighted brand the pig's shoulder. The beast is then killed, and after an exchange of jackets, a sword is thrust into the wound, and the two are marked with the blood of the pig.

I found that I was in very high favour with the Kayans, from my joining their drinking party and

then entering their tribe, and binding myself to them by a tie which they look on as sacred. We had a long talk about the advantage which would accrue to trade if the Kayans established their town nearer the mouth of the river; as at present it takes a Malay boat sixteen days to reach it in the fine season, and thirty in the wet. I was informed they had tried it once, by removing to the mouth of the Tingjir, but building their houses over the freshly-cleared jungle they lost a great many men by fever. They accounted for this by saying they had accidentally fallen upon a spot that was much frequented by evil spirits, and so had returned to their original site.

To close this meeting merrily, a large jar of arrack was introduced, and subsequently a bottle of brandy. Excited by this, Si-Matau clothed himself in full war costume and commenced a sword dance. He was a fine, strong man, and with his dress of black bear-skin ornamented with feathers, his sword in hand, and shield adorned with many-coloured hair, said to be human, looked truly formidable. His dancing expressed the character of the people—quick and vigorous motions, showing to advantage the development of his muscles. He was accompanied by the music of a two-stringed instrument, resembling a rough guitar: the body was shaped like a decked Malay trading prahu, with a small hole an inch in diameter in the centre; the strings were the fine threads of rattan twisted and drawn up tightly by means of tuning-keys; however, the sound produced was not very different from that of a tightly-drawn string. Some of the lookers-on were young girls with regular features, light skins, and

good figures, and with a pleasing, pensive expression.

I looked about the house to-day, and though it is boarded all through, and, therefore, more substantial than those of the Sea Dayaks, yet it did not appear so bright and cheerful as the light yellow matted walls of the latter. I never saw so much firewood collected together as in these houses: on a strong framework spreading partly over the verandah and partly over their rooms, many months' supplies are piled even to the roof;—of course it is a great advantage to have dry materials in all weathers, and it is a provision against times of sickness or busy harvest-work.

On the previous evening there arrived overland the news I had given them of the small-pox having broken out among the Kayans of Rejang, and to-day it formed the subject of conversation. They were anxious to have that medicine which the white men put into the arm, and which they were told came from the belly of a snake.

Tamawan was greatly pleased at witnessing our musket exercise, and when he came on shore, went through it again to the admiration of his followers.

As the Kayans believed some misfortune would happen to us if, after this ceremony of brotherhood, I went anywhere but straight on board the ship, or if Siŋgauding left his house during the day, I remained quiet, and talked over affairs with the Malays.

I find that, as among the Kanowits and other Dayaks, after the death of a relative they go out head-hunting, though they do not kill the first person they

meet; but each one they pass must make them a trifling present, which is no doubt quickly given, to get rid of such unpleasant neighbours.

Nokodah Abdullah, who had traded with this country since he was a boy, and Nakodah Jalil, another experienced man, came to spend the afternoon with me. They said the origin of the Kayans coming to the Baram was this: about twenty-five or thirty years ago, there were three powerful chiefs living in the Balui country—as the interiors of the Rejang and Bintulu rivers are called—Kum Nipa, Kum Laksa, and the father of my brother Siŋgauding; that Kum Laksa quarrelled with the last, and being joined by Kum Nipa, a feud arose, in the course of which the father of Siŋgauding was killed. The relatives, to save the infant son, fled to the Baram with all those who were well affected to the family: some thousands came over, and singularly enough, they were well received by the Kiniahs, the original inhabitants of the country. Though they are said to speak distinct languages, they soon commenced intermarrying, and are gradually becoming one people. I am inclined to think, from their own remarks, that they must originally have come from the same part of Borneo, and that the difference of language is not greater than that which exists among the various branches of the Sea Dayaks. The other inhabitants of the river are the Sububs, on the Tingjir, and the numerous Murut slaves captured in their forays. Si-Matau, who danced so vigorously, was a Subub.

I tried, by the aid of the Malay traders, to draw up a vocabulary of the language, but found that the

ignorance of these men was too great to enable me to make one entitled to any confidence. I noticed that half their conversation with the natives was carried on in corrupt Malay words, and these my interpreters gave me as true Kayan expressions.

Before the arrival of the Kayans, the trade to this river was merely nominal, but they, knowing the value of the edible birds'-nests, soon changed the face of matters, as they discovered caves plentifully supplied with this article of Chinese luxury. Their houses are now built in the neighbourhood of the resort of this wealth-creating bird. Quite lately, however, they wantonly injured their own interests by taking the nests five times a year, and never allowing the birds a chance of hatching an egg; the consequence has been, that they are seeking more secluded spots, and are reported to be resorting to the numerous caves found in the mountain of Molu. The other articles of trade are camphor, wax, gutta-percha, and, lately, a little india-rubber.

They principally import gray shirtings and chintzes; the Malays, vying with each other, took one year, it is said, 50,000 pieces, and allowed the Kayans to have them on credit. Since then everything has gone wrong—debts are not paid, quarrels arise, and the caves are ruined by endeavouring to obtain the means of purchasing more articles.

In some respects, the Kayans differ in their customs from the other aboriginal tribes of Borneo. At the birth of a chief's child there are great rejoicings; a feast is given, pigs, fowls, and goats being freely sacrificed. Jars of arrack are brought forward, and all the



neighbours are called upon to rejoice with their leader. They say that on this occasion a name is given if the omen be good. A feather is inserted up the child's nostril, to tickle it; if it sneeze it is a good sign, but if not, the ceremony is put off to another day. I may mention one inhuman custom, which is, that women who appear to be dying in childbirth are taken to the woods and placed in a hastily-constructed hut; they are looked upon as interdicted, and none but the meanest slaves may approach, either to give them food or to attend to them.

Marriages are celebrated with great pomp, and many men ruin themselves by their extravagance on this occasion. Tamading, with princely munificence, gave away or spent the whole of his property on his wedding-day.

As among the Sea Dayaks, the young people have almost unrestrained intercourse, but if a girl prove with child, a marriage immediately takes place, the bridegroom making the richest presents he can to her relatives. The men, even the greatest chiefs, take but one wife, and, it is said, consider it shameful to mix their blood, and never, therefore, have any intercourse with the inferior women or slaves.

I have already mentioned the coffins elevated on posts; this, doubtless, extends only to the rich, the poor being simply buried.

There is another practice of the Kayans, which was mentioned by Dalton \* as existing among those he met on the Koti river; it was disbelieved by many at the time, but it is undoubtedly true: the rich men

\* See Dalton's *Koti: Moor's Notices of the Indian Archipelago*.

using gold, the poorer silver, bones of birds, and even hard wood. The doctor of the *Semiramis* steamer carefully examined a great number of Kayans, and expressed his astonishment that no injury resulted from this extraordinary practice. A German missionary has accused the Southern Kayans of certain gross usages, but I heard nothing of them, and do not credit his account—his mistakes arising, most probably, from his want of knowledge of the language.

I procured to-day a packet of the iron they use in smelting; it appeared like a mass of rough, twisted ropes. They use, also, two other kinds, of which I did not obtain specimens. We found a little coal in the black shale on which the town is built, and they spoke of golden pebbles, most likely iron pyrites.

As we had heavy rain every night, the current became stronger, and the river rapidly rose.

We went one day to visit the caves whence they obtain the edible birds'-nests. We pulled down in the steamer's cutter for about a mile, and then up a narrow stream, till we could force her along no farther. We now landed, to walk the rest of the way. Among our party were some who had not been accustomed to forest work, and they came arrayed in uniform and patent leather boots, thinking there was a dry and open road. Their surprise was great, and not agreeable, when they found muddy ground and the bed of a mountain torrent had to be traversed. Our guide struck into the stream directly, and our party broke up, some following him, while others sought a dryer way. From the stream we entered a thick wood of young trees, then again across the stream,

up the bed of a mountain torrent, now partly dry ; steep, slippery stones, some overgrown with moss, others worn to a smooth surface ; up again, climbing the hill, over fallen trees, down deep ravines, across little streams, jumping from rock to rock, until, after an hour's hard work, we arrived at a building on the top of a hill—the neatest little house imaginable, walls and floor of well-trimmed planks, and roof of bright red shingle ; it was perfectly new, and was the residence of the guardian of the cave.

I looked vainly about me for an entrance, and on asking, they pointed to a deep gully, where, however, I could see nothing except bushes and grass ; but on descending a short distance, I noticed the bottom of the gully suddenly divide, leaving a rocky chasm some thirty feet in depth. A slight framework of ironwood enabled us to get down over the slippery rocks, and we soon perceived that the cave extended back under the little house, and looked gloomy and deep. Our guide now lit a large wax taper, very inferior for this purpose to the torches used by the Land Dayaks in Sarawak, and led the way. The cave gradually enlarged, but by the imperfect light we could only distinguish masses of uneven rock on either side. As we advanced towards those parts where the finest white nests are found, the ground became covered many feet deep with the guano of the swallow, which emitted scarcely any smell. We advanced nearly two hundred yards without seeing a single nest, Siŋgauling's men having completely cleared the cave the day before : it was very vexing, as we desired to see the nests as they were fixed to the rocks. The cave

gradually became narrower and lower, but we continued our advance till we were stopped by its termination in this direction. Our guides, observing our disappointment in not finding any nests, told us that there were a few in another branch. So we retraced our steps till we reached a passage on our left, and presently arrived at a spot where we descended abruptly some twelve feet; it was pitch dark, as the guide had gone rapidly ahead. On reaching the bottom, I put my foot cautiously down, and could find nothing: the passage being very narrow, I was enabled to support myself with my hands on either side while feeling with my feet for standing ground. There was none in front, but on either edge there was just resting room for the foot; so this chasm was passed in safety. I shouted out to my companions to take care, and the guide returning, we examined what we had escaped: it was a black hole, into which we threw stones, and counting the number of seconds they took in reaching the first obstruction, we calculated it to be about three hundred feet deep. The stones bounded on the rocks below, and we could hear them strike and strike again, till they either reached the bottom, or till the sound was lost in the distance.

We then advanced to a large hall, apparently supported in the middle by a massive pillar, which was, in fact, but a huge stalactite. From above fell a continued shower of cold water, which, doubtless, was the cause of those innumerable stalactites that adorned the roof.

We continued advancing for about seventy or eighty

yards farther, the cave getting 'narrower and narrower till two could not move abreast. Except where the guano lay, the walking was difficult, as the rocks were wet and excessively slippery, and open chasms were not rare. In the farther end we were shown the places where the best nests were obtained : the driest portion of the sides of the cave are chosen by the birds, and these appeared seldom to occur. I found but one inferior nest remaining. Disturbed by our movements and by yesterday's havoc, the swallows were in great commotion, and flew round and round, and darted so near our solitary light, that we were in great fear for its existence.

The natives say that in these caves there are two species of birds—the one that builds the edible nest, and another that takes up its quarters near the entrance, and disturbs, and even attacks the more valuable tenants. The Kayans endeavour to destroy these, and while we were there knocked down some nests constructed of moss, and adhering to the rock by a glutinous but coarse substance. The fine edible one looks like pure isinglass, with some amount of roughness on its surface. The best I have seen are four inches round the upper edge, and appear like a portion of a whitish cup stuck against a wall.

On examining the construction of the mountain, one's first impression is, that all these huge rocks were thrown in heaps together, but, doubtless, water is the agent in forming the caves and the deep fissures that penetrate to the water-line in these limestone mountains.

I believe the guides took us to the smallest cave,

as I am sure, from the produce of the district, that there must be many more better adapted for the swallows, or else that they must be very numerous. In fact, the guides told us that Siŋgauding had several others, and that Tamawan in right of his wife had the best. As they showed no inclination to take us to the uncleared caves, we did not press them.

The person who is employed to guard this place is a singular-looking old man; they say they captured him in the distant mountains during one of their expeditions. He speaks a language unknown to them, but is now learning a little Kayan; he looks very contented, and has certainly the neatest house I have seen in Borneo for his dwelling.

On our return it rained a little, and we had, in many places, to sit and slide down the slippery rocks; we all looked, on our return from our expedition, in a very different condition from that in which we started.

I may mention that these men have become so very conceited that they consider themselves superior to all except ourselves; and, in their pride, have actually commenced killing the swallow, which constitutes their wealth, saying it becomes great chiefs to feed on the most valuable things they possess, regardless of the ultimate consequences.

Siŋgauding came in the afternoon to pay me a visit, and brought with him Si Awang Lawi, the principal chief among the Kiniahs; he appeared a frank old man. They stayed for some time with me talking over various subjects connected with trade. He was

very intelligent, and pressing' that I should go and visit his people, but it was beyond my power. He told me, also, that a Kayan, one of a party of several hundred head-hunters, had returned half starved, and reported that he was the only survivor, and that there was, in consequence, much mourning in the upper villages.

The next day having been fixed for our departure, I was requested to pay Si Obong, Tamawan's wife, a visit. I found her residing in a temporary house, awaiting the completion of the great residence that was rising rapidly, and whose progress we could watch from the ship.

Si Obong was seated on fine mats, and was surrounded by various cushions. She had passed her first youth, and had become very stout, in fact, her limbs were much too large for a woman. She wore little clothing—a couple of English handkerchiefs still in one piece, put round her hips, hanging down, and tucked in at the side, and over her bosom she occasionally threw a loose black cloth. Her face was round, good-tempered, but rather coarse, her voice was gentle, and she wore her long black hair hanging loose, but kept off her face by fillets of white bark. The most curious part of her costume was what I must call a hip-lace of beads, consisting of three strings, one of yellow beads; the next of varied colours, more valuable; and the third of several hundred of those so much prized by the Kayan ladies. It is difficult to describe a bead so as to show its peculiarities. At my request, she took off her hip-lace and handed it to me; the best appeared like a body of black stone,

with four other variegated ones let in around. It was only in appearance that they were let in; the colours of these four marks were a mixture of green, yellow, blue, and gray.

Were I to endeavour to estimate the price in produce she and her parents had paid for this hip-lace, the amount would appear fabulous. She showed me one bead for which they had given eleven pounds' weight of the finest birds' nests, or, at the Singapore market price, thirty-five pounds sterling. She had many of a value nearly equal, and wore none which had not cost her nine shillings.

She was the only daughter of a chief of the highest extraction, and Tamawan owed the principal share of his influence, and perhaps all his wealth, to her. The caves he possessed were hers, and she had been won by the fame of his warlike expeditions and the number of heads suspended around his hearth. There is no doubt that the Baram Kayans are less desirous of heads than they were, and prefer slaves who can cultivate their farms, and thus increase their fortunes and consideration.

Tamawan complained bitterly that his strength was leaving him, that his body was becoming of no use, and that I must give him medicine to restore him. I promised him a few tonics, at the same time pointed out to him that he was suffering from rheumatism, caught whilst sleeping in the jungle during his last expedition; recommended him to stay at home, to wear more clothing, to drink less ardent spirit, and not indulge so much in fat pork.

Si Obong offered me refreshments in the shape of



arrack and preserved fruit, but of neither did she herself partake. I noticed two of her attendants, who were really pretty, being blessed with well-shaped noses and mouths, a rarity among the natives of Borneo. They both sat silent and did not exchange a word, but were ready to obey the slightest call of their mistress.

Si Obong had her arms much tatooed, and was also ornamented in that manner from just under the hip joint to three inches below the knee. This could be observed, as her dress opened at the side. She showed me in what way she employed her time; among other things, she had made a rattan seat, covered with fine bead-work, for her expected baby. When the women go out, the child is placed in this, which is slung over the back. The baskets around, which were filled with clothes, were also her handiwork, and were carefully made, and likewise ornamented with innumerable small Venetian beads. There appeared to be no want of goods here, as they were heaped in all directions; I noticed among other things an old English lamp, half-a-dozen tumblers, four bottles of brandy, a brass kettle, and cooking pots.

After sitting there about a couple of hours, I took my leave and returned on board, and then sent Si Obong what I thought would please her, in the shape of a silver spoon, a silver fruit-knife, some gandy handkerchiefs, looking-glasses, and other trifles. The silver articles, I heard, greatly delighted her.

The chiefs all came on board to make their farewell visit, and being eager that I should spend my last

evening with them, carried me off, and talking was kept up till a musket shot from the ship gave notice that a few fireworks were about to be let off; upon which the whole assemblage of several hundreds hurried to the river's bank, tumbling over each other in their eagerness.

The rockets and blue lights filled them with astonishment and delight; the former as warlike instruments with which they could defeat their enemies, and the latter because, they said, it turned night into day. I stayed till ten, and promised, if possible, to return and spend a few months with them. On no other condition was I to be suffered to depart. They hinted that, united, we could soon possess the neighbouring countries between us.

Siŋgauding sent me, to-day, a sword made with his own hands, a war dress of tiger-cat skin, a head-dress of the same material, with a long feather of the Argus pheasant stuck into it. The peculiarity of the Kayan sword is that it is concave on the upper side, and convex below, and is made either right-handed or left-handed. It is a dangerous instrument in the hands of the inexperienced; for if you cut down on the left side of a tree with a right-handed sword, it will fly off in a most eccentric manner; but, well used, it inflicts very deep wounds, and will cut through young trees better than any other instrument. I sent, as a return present, a heavy cavalry sword; in fact, I was nearly exhausted of the means of making presents.

I may remark that their iron ore appears to be easily melted. They dig a small pit in the ground; in the bottom are various holes, through which are

driven currents of air by very primitive bellows. Charcoal is thrown in ; then the ore, well broken up, is added and covered with charcoal ; fresh ore and fresh fuel, in alternate layers, till the furnace is filled. A light is then put to the mass through a hole below, and, the wind being driven in, the process is soon completed.

The day before we left we nearly had a serious accident : one of the quartermasters, in getting into a canoe, fell into the stream, which, swelled by the heavy rains, was running swiftly by ; he was carried away in a moment, but the Kayans were instantly after, and brought him back safe, though half-choked with water.

At sunrise we started on our return, and all the inhabitants of the town assembled on the river's bank to witness our departure. The steamer turned with ease, and was swept with great speed down the stream. We took a native trading vessel in tow, which assisted our steering, and reached the mouth on the following day without the slightest accident.

I hear that the exclamations of the Kayans, when they first perceived the steamer rounding the point, were,—“ Here is a god come among us ! ” others cried, “ It is a mighty spirit ! ”

The latitude of the town is  $3^{\circ} 30'$  ; the longitude,  $114^{\circ} 40'$ .

I regret I was never again enabled to visit the Baram River, as besides the personal gratification derived, there is a great public good done, by a constant friendly surveillance over the aborigines. Many of the Kayans returned my visit to Labuan, but I was

absent ; it was not, however, material, as they were well treated by the colonial officers.

Whilst in Baram I could learn nothing to confirm the account that any of the Kayans were cannibals. We first heard the charge against them from three Dayaks of the tribe of Sibaru, whose residence is on the Kapuas River, in the district of Santang, under Dutch influence. I was present when they were carefully questioned, and, though their information has already appeared, I will repeat the substance.

They said that their tribe and a party of Kayans attacked, unsuccessfully, a small Malay village, but, in the fight, the body of one of their enemies was secured. Their allies immediately sliced off the flesh and put it away in their side baskets, and in the evening, while all the party were preparing their supper, brought out the human flesh, and roasted and eat it. They saw it themselves. The Dayaks of Jangkang, on the Skeium, between the districts of the Sarawak and Dutch territories, are generally accused of cannibalism.

I do not remember having heard any other persons actually affirm that they had seen the Kayans eat human flesh, till the subject was brought up last year before the present Sultan of Borneo and his court ; when Usup, one of the young nobles present, said that in 1855 some Muka men were executed at Bintulu, and that a few of the Kayans, who had assisted in their capture, took portions of the bodies of the criminals, roasted and ate them. This was witnessed by himself and many others who were then present. The Kayans, however, had not, as a body, joined in this disgusting

feast ; but, perhaps, some of the more ferocious may practise it to strike terror into their enemies.

The account given by the Malays of the former system of trade pursued by the Kayans is curious. They say that when a native merchant arrived at the landing place of a village, the chief settled the terms with him, and all the goods were carried up to the houses, and placed in a prepared spot, secure from pilferers. For a week no business was done, but the stranger and his followers were feasted at the public expense. After that, the goods were brought out and spread in the public room, and the prices fixed. The chief selected what he wanted, and the next in rank in rotation, till all the villagers were satisfied. Three months' credit was always given, but at the appointed day the produce in exchange was ready for the trader. I imagine the Malays would be glad to return to the old system.

The Kayans were seldom very welcome guests at a small village, helping themselves freely to everything that took their fancy ; but this only occurred, as a Malay shrewdly observed, in places where they were feared.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE LAND DAYAKS.

I HAD already made many visits among the Sea Dayaks, but had never penetrated to the interior waters of the Sarawak from Kuching. I was, therefore, quite ready to accept Captain Brooke's invitation to accompany him on a tour of inspection. As the stream is full of rapids, our crew was selected of Sarawak men, well acquainted with the peculiar navigation. I may here remark that there is something characteristic about the true Sarawak man : his look is eminently respectable, his face is longer and more marked than that of the other Malays, his complexion often darker, his manners quiet and respectful. There is a tradition current in this country, that once upon a time, the capital of Sarawak was at Santubong, the western entrance of the river ; that during the absence of the men on an expedition up the country, some marauding Peguans arrived there in their ships, and finding the defenceless state of the town attacked it, carried it by assault, and made off with their spoils and innumerable female prisoners. The Sarawak men fortunately returned a few hours after, and instantly gave chase. Their fast war boats soon overtook the clumsy Peguan ships. They made short work of it : killed the marauding

chiefs, and brought back the rest prisoners to Santubong, and from them the Samarahan and some of the Sarawak men are said to be descended, which, if true, may account for the darker complexion.

The Sarawak is not navigable for ships far above Kuching, though at the height of the flood a large vessel was about thirty years ago taken fifteen miles above it to a place called Ledah Tanah. An English ship, laden with sugar, put into the mouth of the Sarawak river for water, and the captain and mates were invited to meet the rajahs of the country. They went on shore, where they were informed that their vessel was too leaky to proceed on her voyage, but that they would be provided with a passage to Singapore in one of the native prahus. Resistance was useless. They were surrounded by hundreds of armed men, and were hurried off to sea immediately to be murdered at the first island. The *Lascar* crew were detained as slaves, and two of them were still alive when I first reached Sarawak. Many of the Malays have told me that sugar never was so plentiful in their houses either before or since. The banks of the river on either side continue low, and are adapted in their present state to rice cultivation, though with a little drainage the Chinese have rendered the soil admirably suited for sugar-cane and other cultivations. The country for fifteen miles is pretty but monotonous, the scenery being only occasionally varied by views of the surrounding mountains.

We passed the first night at Ledah Tanah, or tongue of land, the point of junction of the two branches of the river. Here the Rajah had a cattle farm, and a

pretty cottage surrounded by fruit trees, principally of magnificent durians, a fruit which has been the subject of much controversy. It varies in size from a six to sixty-eight pounder shot, and looks like an enormous chesnut, with its prickly outer coating. On opening the rough rind, we find five or six rows of seeds covered with a white or yellow pulpy substance, which tastes and smells like a custard strongly flavoured with onions, or, to those who delight in it, it is of a delicious and unapproachable flavour, and, when perfectly fresh, has a pleasing perfume. These different opinions are given at the same moment, by different persons describing the same fruit.

When the people abandoned Santubong, they retired to Ledah Tanah, where they established their town; the posts of some of their houses still remain, being of iron-wood, which may be said practically to last for ever.

We continued our course up the left-hand branch, the character of the scenery becoming more interesting every moment. The stream soon narrows, the water is clearer, shallower, and its course is interrupted by rocks and large stones, over which the stream foams, dashes, breaks, rendering the passage dangerous for small boats; indeed, the name of one of these rapids, Rhium Bangkei—"The Rapid of the Corpse"—would seem to prove that fatal accidents do occur. The swamping of a boat, or the loss of goods, by inexperienced hands, is not rare.

The first mountain we passed was that of Stat, which, though not more than 1,500 feet high, is in many respects remarkable, rising abruptly from the



low country, a real isolated peak which may be distinguished even out at sea, and from one view it appears like the end of a bent finger. In common with most of the limestone mountains in Borneo, it presents bare, perpendicular surfaces, with jagged rocks at the edges, but surrounded by vegetation, and that vegetation growing where soil can scarcely be supposed to exist; in fact, the roots of the trees penetrate far through deep fissures and clefts into the inner portion of the mountain. The other hills visible during our progress to-day had the same general features, particularly the two which rise near the village of San Pro, where we intended to pass the night.

In our evening walk we were much struck by the remarkable beauty of this place; the two lofty and almost perpendicular mountains rise abruptly on either side of the river, leaving but a strip of land on the water's edge. One called Sibayat towers above the village on the left bank; the other, Si Bigi, is on the opposite side; the river, now running through limestone, sparkles clear at their feet, undermining the rocks, and forming fantastic little caves, crowned above with noble overhanging trees. Abrupt turns, short reaches, and pebbly beds add to the beauty of the scene, and, just as the last rays of the sun were gilding the summits of the twin peaks, we sat down on the huge trunk of a fallen tree, which the floods of the rainy season had swept down from the interior, and half buried in the sand and pebbles. There we remained till the shades of evening had completely closed in around us, speculating on the probable future of the country, and the words almost rose simultane-

ously to our lips—were we missionaries, we would fix our houses here. With my own idea of what a missionary should do, there could be no better spot than San Pro to commence operations. The village was not large, but it is better completely to gain over twenty families, than exhaust one's energies merely skimming over the surface of a dozen tribes, leaving no permanent impression. We fixed on the best locality for a house, a trim garden, a diminutive church, and a school. It is a soil that would repay culture.

We were not fortunate in the time of our visit, as most of the people were away preparing their farms. We took up our residence in the head-house, which, being new, however, was destitute of the usual ornaments. All head-houses have the same appearance, being built on high posts, and in a circular form, with a sharp conical roof. The windows are, in fact, a large portion of the roof, being raised up, like the lid of a desk, during fine weather, and supported by props; but when rain or night comes on, they are removed, and the whole appearance is snug in the extreme, particularly when a bright fire is lit in the centre, and throws a fitful gleam on all the surrounding objects. Around the room are rough divans, on which the men usually sit or sleep, but that night, there being a cold wind and a drizzling rain, a good fire was kept up, and the people crowded near. I awoke at about two, and put my head out of my curtains to look at a night scene; a dozen of the old men were there collected close over the fire, smoking the tobacco we had given them, and discoursing in a low tone about us. The flames occa-

sionally shot up brilliantly and showed me the curious group, and then, as they faded away, nothing but the outlines of the half-naked old men could be seen cowering over the embers, as a ruder blast or a heavier shower brought the cold air upon them.

Started from San Pro early in the morning. The limestone rock, undermined in every direction, was worn into very singular shapes. Occasionally the tall trees, finding insufficient support, had broken from the bank, and slipped their roots into the river, to be completely washed away by the next flood. At ten, brought up on a pebbly beach for breakfast, opposite a little cave, about which the Dayaks have as usual a story—this time an indelicate one. Continuing our course, we reached the mountain of Rumbang, remarkable for its curious caves. We had brought guides with us from San Pro, and stopping at the nearest point went ashore, and after a walk and climb of a few hundred yards, reached the entrance of the first cave. Descending over a few rough stones, we found ourselves in the interior, through which a small stream makes its way. Having lighted a candle and a torch, we advanced—now fording the brook, now jumping over it: the floor is principally pebbly, though occasionally we met with soft sand and slippery rock. The cave itself has no remarkable characteristic, but is nevertheless interesting. Its height varied between thirty, forty, and fifty feet—its exit beautiful in rugged features in a soft light, which subdued the uncouth shapes of the rocks, and rendered them striking and pleasing to the eye. This we particularly noticed on our

return, when we approached the entrance. Then the light played on the surface of the stream, as it bubbled onward in its course, and the reflection slightly illuminated the surrounding crags, reminding me of a robber's cave in a dissolving view.

To-day we only penetrated through the mountain and looked at the country beyond, a restricted view, as the jungle closely hemmed round the cave: afterwards I heard we need not have returned by the way we came, but that if we did not fear a steep climb, there was a cavern exactly above the one we had come through which would lead us back to the river—in fact, an upper tunnel. We thought at first it must be a joke of the Dayaks, but they assured us of the truth: so we told them to lead the way. It was difficult, in fact, very difficult, until we came to an overhanging rock, against which a long pole leant with an occasional cross-piece; at the top was another overhanging ledge, round which it was necessary to pass by leaning the body over the abyss, and trusting entirely to our hands and to the strength of the roots. The Dayak guide led the way, and as we approached this difficulty we observed him smile. It was at an unfortunate boast. When we first proposed to make the ascent, our guide observed—"No one but a Dayak can ascend." I unfortunately answered, "Wherever a Dayak can go, an Englishman can follow." Hence his smile. He proceeded cautiously, as these rough ladders are often rotten, and, it is said, occasionally left unfastened to entrap an unwary thief, who may desire to pilfer the edible swallows' nests found in the upper caves. When he had reached the summit, he

invited me to follow; there was no help for it, so I tried; the pole was no great difficulty, but rounding the overhanging rock with my body leaning over the abyss tested my strength and nerve; one of the party followed, the other thought it wiser to return by the way he came. The ascent repaid us, however; the cave, though not lofty, was full of large chambers, of narrow passages, and occasionally of huge chasms penetrating to the depths below. They said the whole mountain was perforated by these galleries. Our return to the boat was difficult, as we had to force our way through the tangled bushes, and over ground unknown even to the Dayaks. We found our companion seated in the boat, drinking cool claret and water, and as he beheld us coming in tired, hot, covered with dirt, and with clothes half torn from our bodies, I fear he did not envy us.

Our men had now to drop their paddles once at least in every reach, and to seize their poles and force us along up the gradually lengthening rapids; the motion of the boat thus propelled is exceedingly pleasant; at one spot we noticed a Dayak suspension-bridge spanning the river above a dangerous rapid. Kasim, a favourite follower, turned to us and said, "It was here that the Datu Tumanggong nearly lost his life." We asked how. I will let Kasim relate his story; it is an illustration of Bornean ways.

The Datu Tumanggong is the chief third in rank in Sarawak, and was in his early days known as a successful pirate. He was also the terror of the Dayaks. Many years before Sir James Brooke arrived, he had for some cause killed a Dayak of the tribe of Si-

Buñgoh, in those days not considered a deed requiring particular notice, but on this occasion the tribe determined to be revenged. The next time the Datu was known to be on his way up the river, the Dayaks assembled in great numbers round the suspension-bridge, concealing themselves among the trées. Un-suspicious of the ambuscade, the chief, with twenty Malay followers, was endeavouring to pole up the rapid, when a shower of spears threw them into confusion ; the Datu was principally aimed at, his umbrella was torn to shreds, and he was wounded severely about the shoulders. The men, dropping their poles, allowed the boat to get across the stream, and she was instantly upset ; while they, unable to see their enemies, scattered themselves in every direction, and hiding among the rocks shouted to their chief to fire. They say he stood his ground manfully, and fired twice without success at his foes, who, thus emboldened, drew nearer. The water was rushing down with great force, and reached over his knees, which rendered the operation of loading extremely difficult, but his third shot was fortunate, for bringing down the boldest Dayak, it created a panic among the rest. On collecting his followers, he found two killed and several wounded, among the latter one of our present 'boat-men. I have often heard the chief tell the story since with great glee, his voice rising and going through all his remembered movements with wonderful spirit. "Ah, I was young in those days."

There is a very singular belief prevalent among the Malays—it is this, that men, by going through certain ceremonies, can render themselves invulner-

able. The 'Datu, notwithstanding the many wounds he has received, is still popularly believed to be so. They generally say that these men can never have their skin cut by any sharp instrument, and the offer to test the truth by the application of a razor is not considered polite. The old chief has often said,—“It is as well that the vulgar should believe it, though we know better.”

The favourite spot chosen by the novitiates was in the jungle at the back of Sir James Brooke's former house, between two little streams, called the greater and lesser Bedil (a brass gun). The aspirant was required to remain three days alone in the woods without speaking, to live very sparingly, and not to indulge in the favourite luxuries of tobacco, sirih, and betel. If on the third day he dreamt of a beautiful spirit descending to speak to him, he might consider that his work was accomplished. Patah, the Datu's son, a fine, bold, and good fellow, told me he had tried twice, but the fairy had never appeared to him.

On reaching the landing-place leading to the Grung village, we found a large party of Dayaks assembled, who begged us to remain and visit their houses; but instead, we promised to return in a few days, and meet the representatives of the neighbouring tribes at their village. We now pushed on to the Sibungho Dayaks, who inhabited the river's bank; but on our stopping at the landing-place, an old man came down to say that the long house before us was pamali or tabooed, and that the Orang Kaya, or village chief, was himself in that unenviable predicament. So we pulled across the river and took up our quarters near

a pebbly beach, the men making temporary mat huts, while we stayed in the boat. In the course of the evening, a number of the elders of the neighbouring village-houses of the same tribe came down and promised to provide small canoes and Dayaks to take us up the stream, as it had become too shallow to allow of our continuing in the large boat.

At six in the morning the Sibuñgoh Dayaks brought the light canoes with which we were to continue our progress up the river. We left our crew behind, taking with us only our personal servants and Kasim. It was quite a little procession, each canoe containing but one passenger. We started, and were poled up at a rapid pace against the stream. Our canoes were small, drawing but a few inches of water, and were managed by two Dayaks, one standing at the stem, the other at the stern, with long bamboos in their hands, impelling us forward at a great pace.

The scenery varied much; occasionally we passed high hills which rose smilingly above us, clothed to the summit with vegetation. Bornean hills seldom frown, their clothing is too luxuriant, their aspect generally free from harsh outlines: even their precipices have some softening feature. On we passed, sometimes a long reach stretched before us, completely overshadowed by trees whose branches entwining from bank to bank completely sheltered us from the sun, then reclining on our pillows we could indulge in snatches from our home literature. Could the authors but imagine the variety of situations in which their effusions would be perused, could they anticipate the delight they inspire in the British traveller who works



his way onwards even towards the interior of Borneo, they would, I think, be surprised and gratified. The magazines and reviews are the solaces of educated exiles in all positions. From these soft scenes and pleasant employments, we were constantly aroused by our approach to roaring rapids, which foaming over scattered rocks threatened destruction to our frail canoes; but the skill of the Dayak was never at fault, and we passed every obstruction without an accident. At these rapids, as at those before mentioned, boats are often lost.

As we approached the country of the Senah tribe, the banks became more uniform in appearance, and the bamboo constantly formed the principal vegetation; these bamboos are wonderfully useful to the Dayaks, and are turned to many purposes. In height they sometimes exceed sixty feet. During this tour I saw them used, stretched in lengths for paths, placed notched for steps up steep ascents, as railings for rice-fields and yam-gardens, as posts for houses. Split, they form the floors; beaten out, they are the walls of many of the dwellings, and neat and pretty they look; cut into lengths, water is carried in them; joined together, they form aqueducts that stretch for hundreds of yards; with them the Dayaks can strike a light; and last, not least, they are used to cook rice in—being hard enough to stand the fire until the food is ready to eat. They are put to numerous other uses, but the above enumeration is perhaps sufficient.

The Senah Dayaks plant yams to a great extent, which grow to a large size, and boiled have an excel-

lent flavour, whether used as a vegetable or a salad. The Senahs are called rich from the abundance of their rice, which flourishes in their fertile valleys, but more owing to their industry; we saw many instances of the latter in their fishing apparatus, which was often very extensive; while the tribes lower down, with better opportunities, seemed quite to neglect their fisheries. Our men unfortunately had brought no casting net with them, so we were obliged to be content to hear from the Malays that the flavour of the freshwater fish caught here is excellent. It is a curious fact, that far as we are above the influence of the flood tide, and with so many rapids below us, yet sharks are found here in the fresh water. I call it a fact because native testimony is unanimous. I remember hearing Mr. Crookshank say to the Datu Patinggi, the principal native chief, that he considered it a very curious thing that a fish, supposed to live only in the sea, should frequent these interior waters.

“Not at all,” answered the Datu, “not more curious than seeing you Englishmen abandon your own country, to come so far and live among us Malays.”

As a general rule, the sharks and alligators do not here meddle with human beings, but confine their attention to the fish, the dogs, and the numerous droves of wild pigs constantly passing from one bank to the other. During the fruit season the movement among the swine is very remarkable; Mr. Brereton told me he once saw at least three hundred in one drove crossing the river Batang Lupar, where it was above seven hundred yards broad. I have often seen

them myself in lesser numbers; on one occasion I was present when seventeen were killed, which formed a regular feast for some aborigines who secured the bodies. Generally a fine old boar leads the way, and is followed very closely by the rest. They grow to a great size; I have seen one carefully measured; its height at the shoulder was forty-two inches, and the length of the head twenty-two.

The Senahs have built many of their farm-houses in the trees overhanging the stream; in one was a whole family engaged in the important operation of preparing dinner, and it was amusing to observe the little children coming fearlessly to the very edge of the platform above the rushing stream to look at us, and standing in positions so dangerous that they would drive an English mother distracted.

As we approach the interior of the Sarawak river, the mountains become more lofty, and the stream takes the character of a torrent, after heavy rains it rises suddenly and to a great height. I have seen grass left by the receding waters at least forty feet above our present level. Even one heavy shower renders all the fords impassable; so that to avoid this inconvenience the Senahs have thrown lofty bridges across, to facilitate the communication between their several villages.

How light and elegant do these suspension-bridges look—one in particular I will attempt to describe. At a broad part of the stream, two fine old trees hung over the water opposite each other; long bamboos well lashed together formed the main portion, and were fastened by smaller ones to the branches

above; railings on either side were added to give greater strength and security, yet the whole affair appeared so flimsy, and was so far above the stream, that when we saw a woman and child pass over it, we scarcely drew our breath till they were safe on the other side. And yet we knew they were secure.

I have often passed over them myself; they are of the width of one bamboo, but the side railings give one confidence. Accidents do happen from carelessly allowing the rattan lashings to rot. Once when pressed for time I was passing rapidly across with many men following close behind me, when the bridge began to sway most unpleasantly, and crack, crack was heard as several of the supports gave way. Most of my men were fortunately not near the centre, and relieved the bridge of their weight by clinging to the branches, otherwise those who were with me in the middle would have been precipitated on the rocks far below. After that we always passed singly over such neglected bridges.

Towards the afternoon we reached the first house, inhabited by the Senah chief's younger brother. This tribe is more scattered than is usually the case in Sarawak. Four, six, eight families live together, and we nowhere noticed those immense long village-houses so common in other tribes.

We found some Chinese trading for pigs and rice, one of whom had been established in this place for about six years. The house where we stopped for the night was tolerably comfortable, with the walls roughly planked. It was evident that the inmates were very pleased to see us, and upon their pressing invitations

we agreed to stay some days to give time for the whole tribe to be collected.

In the evening we took a long walk over the steep hills at the back of the village, and had a fair view of Penrisen,, one of the highest mountains in Sarawak, though a portion of its southern face is claimed by the Dutch. It is estimated at above 5,000 feet above the level of the sea. We had a good view of the interior Sadong country, a fine succession of hill and dale, with blue mountains in the distance.

Stayed in the house nearly the whole of next day, as the Dayaks wished to dance and feast in our presence. The gongs were kept going, the drums beaten, and all within five yards of us, until our heads were dizzy. Occasionally, from sheer weariness, or from anxiety to partake of the good things produced for the feast, this din would cease, and then we could enter into conversation with the elders.

The dress of the Land Dayaks is very simple; the men wear the *chawat*, that is, a strip of cloth round their loins; a jacket and head-dress, the last sometimes of bark, and fantastically put on; their ornaments are brass rings, necklaces of beads and sometimes of tiger-cat's teeth, and very neat plaited rings of rattan, stained black. On festive occasions the principal men appear in Malay jackets, and sometimes in trousers. The women have a short petticoat reaching from the hips to the knees, a jacket, and round their waists a band, often ten inches wide, of bark or bamboo, kept together by brass wire or rattans. It fits tight, and is only removed on the woman becoming pregnant.

Captain Brooke's principal object in making this tour was to inquire into the complaints which had been brought against the principal Malay chief of forcing the Dayak tribes to trade with him, whether they wanted his goods or not, and insisting upon fixing his own price on the articles supplied. The complaints were more than substantiated, even the Chinese were seldom able to procure rice, and were forced to content themselves with dealing in swine.

This was the chief's system : he sent up a chanang, a kind of small gong much esteemed by the Dayaks, and ordered them to buy it at an exorbitant rate ; before they had paid for that he sent another, keeping up a constant supply to prevent their trading with other people. When he heard that another Malay had sold a chanang in fair trade to these Dayaks, he would instantly send two more and compel them to receive them. He had done the same with regard to salt, and to the clothes of both male and female, striving to his utmost to secure a monopoly. In this path he was followed by all his relations and connections, their threats terrified the Dayaks, who loudly complained also of being used as beasts of burden without receiving hire.

The Senahs are altogether an interesting tribe ; in manner the men are polite and the women are full of life ; some of the girls were pretty, their best age being from six to sixteen, after which they begin to fall off. They appear to marry very young, and have, for Asiatics, rather large families, four, five, and six children being quite common. Some of the old gentlemen observed that, though they were only allowed to

marry one wife, yet they were not strictly faithful to her if a favourable opportunity occurred, which observation seemed much to amuse the assembly.

Among the women present was the widow of Pa Bunang, a person whose story is well worth relating as illustrative of their character and of their ways. He was a fine handsome man, certainly the most handsome Dayak I have ever seen, tall and powerfully made, with a bold, open countenance. The chief of the Senahs took a liking to him, and, having no children, adopted and found him a wife among his own relations. She was a nice-looking girl, plump and well made. In former times the husband had been much noticed by Europeans, and in the pride of his heart determined to be the first man of his tribe: the only one he thought likely to oppose his pretensions was Pa Mua, the chief's brother, who would not allow him to interfere in public affairs, and opposed his pretensions to superiority, in which he was supported by the sympathies of the whole community. Pa Bunang then determined on violent methods; he left the tribe for a few days and returned with the announcement that the Sarawak Government was so pleased with him, that they intended to make him a great man in the tribe. Resolving to get rid of his rival, he lay in wait for him one day in a by-path, concealing himself carefully behind some bushes; the unsuspecting Pa Mua passed by, when he sprang upon him, and with one blow of his sword laid him dead at his feet, and then rushed into the jungle, thinking he had done the deed unnoticed, but at the moment of striking, the

son of the murdered man came round the turning of the path in time to witness the act and to recognize the culprit. The alarm was given, and before the murderer could reach the chief's house, where his wife and child resided, a menacing crowd had assembled. He coolly assured them that he was acting under the orders of the Sarawak Government, and was now going to report the accomplishment of the deed. Though the people did not believe him, they suffered him to depart with his family, but followed closely in his track. They denounced him, he was instantly seized, thrown into prison, and after ten days, to allow witnesses to assemble, the affair came on before the Sarawak Court.

It was so curious a case that I determined to be present at the trial. I found the court crowded, at least a dozen Englishmen were assembled, who, with the Malay chiefs, acted as a kind of jury. Though the case was clear in many respects, yet the greatest pains were taken to obtain the best evidence: the son of the murdered man was present, but it was at first feared, from the preliminary inquiries, that he would be afraid to give his evidence before the prisoner. When he was called into court the lad appeared perfectly changed; he gave his evidence with a coolness, a precision, and yet with an intensity that nothing but the deepest feelings could excite; he never faltered once, but wound up his story by pointing to the prisoner and saying, "My father was killed by that man." The prisoner could offer no defence; at first he denied the deed, then said that Pa Mua had seduced his wife, then confessed and implored for



mercy. The verdict was unanimous, and he was condemned to death. A fearful scene now took place; the constables had very improperly allowed the wife and child to sit close beside him, and he had, while the lad was giving his evidence, unnoticed by any, got his little child to crawl in between his manacled arms. When he heard the sentence he threw himself on his knees and begged in piteous terms for mercy, but, finding it was useless, he declared that his wife and child should die with him; he first struck at the former and then tried to strangle the little thing between his arms, but failing in that, while struggling with the police, fixed his teeth so tightly in the child's neck that they had to be forced open with the point of a sword. His wife fled, and the child was saved, but he continued to struggle, and his roars could be heard until he was secured in his cell. I never witnessed a more painful scene. A marked contrast to that of the Malay who, calm and placid to the last moment, receives his condemnation with the observation, "It is your sentence," and walks quietly to prison and to execution.

The evening was spent in dancing, singing, and drinking, until the fun waxed fast and furious.

The next station up the river is San Pih, which we did not visit, as business prevented our extending our tour. We were delighted with the position of the house in which we were staying; it was on the bank of the stream, here but a foot deep, occasionally not even six inches, so that the canoes had to be dragged over the pebbly bottom. The water coming from the neighbouring high mountains is both clear and cool,

offering delightful places for bathing. In one large and deep pool, a little below the landing-place, the Dayaks say alligators congregate; but if so, they must be harmless, as I saw very little children bathing there, but yet I did not venture, as they might have been attracted by the unusual colour of my skin. The baths we obtain in the interior are of themselves worth the exertion of reaching those sequestered spots, as the refreshing and invigorating feeling after a plunge into the cool stream is indeed delightful.

About midday we parted from our kind hosts, not before we had given solemn promises to return again as soon as possible, and now directed our faces homeward. The descent of the river was exciting, now leisurely suffering the canoe to float with the stream; then, as the distant roar announced a rapid, intelligent were the movements of the Dayaks, as they chose the least dangerous part, the waters increasing in speed as we approached the fall; then caught by the stream, we hurried along at the pace of a race-horse, and dashing through the foam were shot into the tranquil pool that is generally found below a rapid. At one we were compelled to take out all our baggage, and the non-swimmers walked past the obstruction to be re-shipped below. It was with feelings, half of envy, half of admiration, that I saw Captain Brooke tempt the danger.

About half-way down to Sibungho we noticed white flags overhanging the river at a landing-place, and there in a temporary hut was waiting the chief of the village Brang; we stayed with him about an hour, and

resisting his pressing invitation to his village, on account of our previous engagement, heard what he desired to communicate, and then continued our course to Sibunghoh. We soon transhipped our goods to the large boat, and were not sorry, as many hours in a small canoe is fatiguing. We found that the chief was no longer under taboo, so we stayed some little time with him, and then hurried on to the next landing-place, where we found a large party of Dayaks ready to escort us to the village of Grung.

The walk was pleasant, principally over the land that had formerly been farmed, and now covered with brushwood and young trees, affording but little shelter from the burning sun. The country was undulating, with pretty pebbly streams in the hollows. Much rain having fallen in this neighbourhood during the last few days the paths were execrable, even for Dayak paths, which are, perhaps, the worst in the world. Over a marshy soil a line of single trees is laid, end to end, on which you balance yourself as you move along; there is no danger here, except of a slip into the oozy mud, sometimes up to the waist, affording to the non-sufferers great cause of merriment as you struggle and flounder to a drier spot; but these trunks of trees thrown over ravines are dangerous after rain, as when deprived of their bark they are slippery. But it is astonishing what use will do; we soon began to criticize and pronounce a wretched quagmire a tolerable path. The Dayak is so active, and so accustomed to the work, that he seldom thinks of doing more than felling a small tree, clearing it of its branches, and throwing it across the smaller streams

as a bridge, but after harvest, when carrying home the rice, a slight railing is added to give steadiness to his movements.

The village of Grung is prettily situated near a small and clear stream, and is surrounded by dense groves of fruit-trees, particularly of durians, while occasionally the graceful areca palm rises near the houses. In one thing the Grungs excel every other tribe of Dayaks I have ever seen, and that is in dirt; their houses were dirty, their mats were dirty, and their little children could only be described as positively filthy.

We found the village crowded with the representatives of all the neighbouring tribes, and long strings of men, women, and children, were continually arriving as we approached. Directly we ascended the notched tree that served as a ladder to the chief's house, we found that we were no longer free agents. A crowd of old women instantly seized us, and pulled off our shoes and stockings, and commenced most vigorously washing our feet; this water was preserved to fertilize the fields. We were then conducted to a platform but slightly raised above the floor, and requested to sit down, but the mats were so dirty that we could scarcely prevail upon ourselves to do so—perhaps the only time it has occurred to us; generally Dayak mats are charmingly neat and clean. The arrival of our bedding freed us from this difficulty.

We were surrounded by a dense mass of men, women, and children, who appeared all to be talking at once; in fact, more excitement was shown than I have before observed. We had to do so many things,

and almost all at once : to sprinkle rice about, to pour a little water on each child that was presented to us, until, from force of example, the women and even the men insisted upon the same ceremony being performed on them.

Silence being at last restored, our follower Kasim explained in a long speech the object of Captain Brooke's visit ; he spoke in Malay, interlarding it occasionally with Dayak phrases—I say Malay, but a kind of Malay that is only used when addressing the aborigines, clipping and altering words, changing the pronunciation, until I find that some have been deceived into believing this was the true Dayak language. It is to these people what the *Lingua Franca* is to Western Asia.

We got a little respite while eating our dinner, but as soon as we had finished we were again surrounded ; the priestesses of the place were especially active, tying little bells round our wrists and ancles, and bringing rice for us to—how shall I explain it—in fact, for us to spit on, and this delectable morsel they swallowed. No sooner had these learned women been satisfied, than parents brought their children, and insisted upon their being physicked in the same way, taking care to have a full share themselves. One horrid old woman actually came six times.

The chief now advanced, and there was strict attention to hear what he was about to say. He walked to the window, and threw out some grains of rice, and then commenced a kind of prayer, asking for good harvests, for fertility for the women, and for health

for them all. During the whole invocation he kept scattering the seed about. The people were very attentive at first, but soon the murmur of many voices almost drowned the old man's tones. He did not appear very much in earnest, but repeated what he had to say as if he were going over a well-remembered but little-understood lesson; in fact, it is said these invocations are in words not comprehended even by the Dayaks themselves—perhaps they are in some Indian language.

Then a space was cleared for dancing; the old chief and the elders commenced, and were followed by the priestesses. They walked up to us in succession, passed their hands over our arms, pressed our palms, and then uttering a yell or a prolonged screech went off in a slow measured tread, moving their arms and hands in unison with their feet until they reached the end of the house, and came back with the same step to where we sat; then another pressure of the palm, a few more passes to draw virtue out of us, another yell, and off they went again; at one time there were at least a hundred dancing. Few of the young people joined in what appeared in this case a sacred dance.

For three nights we had had little sleep, on account of these ceremonies, but at length, notwithstanding clash of gong and beat of drum, we sank back in our beds, and were soon fast asleep. In perhaps a couple of hours I awoke, my companion was still sleeping uneasily, the din was deafening, and I sat up to look around. Unfortunate movement! I was instantly seized by the hands by two priests, and led up to the chief, who was leisurely cutting a fowl's throat. He

wanted Captain Brooke to perform the following ceremony, but I objected to his being awakened, and offered to do it for him. I was taken to the very end of the house, and the bleeding fowl put in my hands; holding him by his legs, I had to strike the lintels of the doors, sprinkling a little blood over each; when this was over, I had to wave the fowl over the heads of the women, and wish them fertility; over the children, and wish them health; over all the people, and wish them prosperity; out of the window, and invoke good crops for them. At last I reached my mats, and sat down, preparatory to another sleep, when that horrid old woman led another detachment of her sex forward to re-commence the physicking; fortunately but few came, and after setting them off dancing again I fell asleep, and, in spite of all noises, remained so till morning.

It is a fact unnoticed by us before, that among the Dayak tribes there are few girls between the age of ten and fifteen (1852). It is a striking proof of the effects that have attended the change of system from native lawlessness to English superintendence. Before Sir James Brooke held the reins of Government the little female children were seized for slaves and concubines by the Rajahs and Malay chiefs; since that practice has been put an end to, the houses are crowded with interesting girls of nine and younger.

The expression of all classes and of both sexes of these people is that of a subdued melancholy. A man fresh from Europe would doubtless notice many more peculiarities in these tribes, which being familiar to me pass without remark. Their houses I have before

described, and what is suitable for the one is so for the other. Nearly all the representatives then present were but those of the branches of a single tribe which had for many years been scattered. Their language is the same in words, though the accent is occasionally different—the effect of separation and other causes. It is difficult, without long and minute investigation, to familiarize oneself with their individual history and politics.



## CHAPTER V.

## LAND DAYAKS OF SIRAMBAU—THEIR SOCIAL LIFE.

MADAME PFEIFFER, the traveller, suddenly made her appearance among us in December, 1851; she was a woman of middle height, active for her age, with an open countenance and a very pleasant smile. She lived with us for some days, and then we took her to visit the Dayaks of Sirambau on the right-hand branch. We selected a very fast, long prahu, fitted up with a little cabin for her, and another for ourselves, and having a numerous crew, pulled past our usual resting-place at Ledah Tanah, and did not stop till we reached the Chinese village of Siniawan, where we took up our quarters for the night.

There were about three hundred Celestials settled here, principally engaged in shop-keeping, though a few cultivated gardens. They were evidently thriving, as the Dayaks of the surrounding country resorted to this place, and there was a constant influx of Chinese and Malay gold workers. Their women, half-breeds, were better-looking than any others in this part of the world; some of the girls were handsome, in one point they set a bright example to their neighbours, and that was in cleanliness. The Malay girls bathe at least three times a day, but are not careful of the con-

dition of their clothes, while the Dayaks are too often neglectful of both their skins and their coverings.

It was quite a pleasure to look at the little Chinese maidens in their prim, neat dresses, and their parents evidently had a pride in their appearance. . To them Madame Pfeiffer was a great attraction, and a crowd followed her everywhere, and wondered at the eagerness she displayed in the chase of a butterfly, or the capture of an insect.

Siniawan is situated on a plain near the foot of the Sirambau mountain, and affords an excellent market for the produce of the interminable fruit groves that cover the lower parts of its slopes, and extend for miles beyond.

As Madame Pfeiffer had never seen a Dayak village, we thought she would like to visit these rather primitive people, who reside about eleven hundred feet up the sides of the mountain. Sirambau is separated from the surrounding ranges, and from the sea appears of great length, while from one view near Siniawan, it is a single peak seventeen hundred feet in height. At a few spots above us, we saw groves of cocoanuts varying the colour of the jungle, and these were at the villages of the Dayaks, all more than a thousand feet above the level of the sea.

In the morning we collected a band of mountaineers to shoulder our baggage, and proceeded towards the hill. The ground around had been lately cleared, and afforded no shelter from the burning sun. I imagine Madame Pfeiffer, in all her travels, had never met worse paths, particularly when we commenced ascending the hill. It appeared exactly as if the Dayaks

had chosen the bed of a mountain torrent as the proper approach to their houses. At first the stones were arranged as a rough paving, then as rougher steps, and at last it became so steep, rock piled on rock, that notched trunks of trees leaning against them were the only means of ascending.

But, if the climbing were difficult, we were partly compensated by the shade of the lofty fruit-trees growing in glorious confusion on either side of our path. Crowded as closely as in the jungle, durians, mangustins, and every variety of fruit-tree, jostled each other for the light, and spoilt the symmetry of their forms. I have not seen elsewhere durian-trees of proportions so magnificent, some above ten feet in circumference, and rising to the height of a hundred and twenty feet. When the season is good, it is dangerous to walk in a grove of these trees, as a breeze gently shaking the ripe fruit from its hold, it falls heavily to the ground. They are often a foot in length, and eight inches in diameter, and many a story was told us of Dayaks being brought home insensible through a blow from a falling durian.

As we advanced up the side of the mountain, we rested at spots where we could obtain partial views of the surrounding country; large Dayak clearings now completely brown, varied the otherwise continuous jungle; gently swelling hills encircled the base of Sirambau, and stretched onwards to the foot of the steep and distant mountains. The Dayaks have led rills of water to the edge of the path, at which they refresh themselves, and occasionally there are rough benches on which they rest their heavy loads, for

they carry up their whole rice crop to their mountain villages.

After a toilsome ascent, which Madame Pfeiffer feelingly describes, we passed the village of Bombok on our left, and continued our course to that of Sirambau, a little distance farther. Here the path was more level, though it lay among huge rocks detached from the summit of the mountain.

Sirambau is one of the most curious villages I have seen; it is large, and the long houses are connected together by platforms of bamboo or by rough bridges—a very necessary precaution, as the numerous pigs rout up the land, and as every description of dirt is thrown from their houses and never removed, it is almost impossible to walk on the ground. Thick groves of palms surround the village and bury it from the world: indeed, it looks as isolated a spot as any in wooded Borneo.

We found the chief Mita ready to receive us, and to conduct us to his apartments; they were very confined, but on the raised platform under the sloping windows we found place for our beds. They very politely gave Madame Pfeiffer an inner room, and provided her with neat white mats.

In the evening the apartments were crowded, and being small, not much space was left for dancing. This village house was altogether uncomfortable; its verandah was not five feet wide, and was totally unfitted for their feasts; the rooms were not twelve feet by sixteen, and the space was still further lessened by a large fireplace that occupied an eighth of the area. Some rough planks were laid on the floor and

then covered with earth; on it were arranged a few stones, and that constituted the fireplace. At each of its corners was a small post that supported a platform, and on this was a heap of firewood kept here to dry and to be ready at hand.

We have had much more intercourse with the villagers on this hill, than with any other, as Sir James Brooke had a country house near the uppermost groves of palms that are seen from Siniawan. Formerly it was a Dayak village, but the inhabitants removing to join another section of their tribe who were in a more sheltered spot, Sir James purchased the fruit-trees around, and built a pretty cottage there.

Peninjau, or the "look-out," was the name of this spot, and it well deserved its name, as from a rock which terminated the level summit of a buttress can be seen a view unsurpassed in extent. I have spent many months at this cottage, and rarely an evening passed without my witnessing the sunset from this favourite rock.

The peak of Santubong is the centre of the picture, and the undulating ground between and the winding of the river may be seen clearly in all its varied detail. The calm sea—from this distance it seemed always calm—bounds the horizon. Two effects of light I have often witnessed here; just at sunset, the rays thrown on the hills, the woods, the water, have a sickly tint; and when rain threatens, the trees in the jungle on the distant hills of Matang stand out distinctly visible, and it is only at such times they do so.

There are three villages on this Sirambau hill—the Peninjau, now visible below my favourite rock,





Bombok, and Sirambau, where we have left Madame Pfeiffer.

Each of these villages contains a head-house; in that at Sirambau there were thirty-three heads, at Bombok thirty-two, and at Peninjau twenty-one, with the skull of a bear killed during a head-hunting expedition. They were all very ancient-looking, in fact none had been added to their store since Sir James Brooke assumed the government of the country. That they still have a longing for a fresh skull, I have little doubt, though previously to the Chinese insurrection the apparent impossibility had made them rather careless on the subject.

There is a custom in these tribes to assist the chief in making his farms; in fact, it is one of the most lucrative of his perquisites. Mita of Sirambau had pushed his prerogative too far, and had forced his people to make him three farms, and as from this and many other reasons, he had ruined his popularity, he looked about him for a means to recover it. At last it struck him that a fresh head would make the whole tribe look up to him with respect.

I was visiting the village one day, when he told me he had a great favour to ask, which was, that I would endeavour to obtain from Sir James Brooke permission for him to make a foray into the neighbouring districts. All the elders of the tribe were present, and it was evident that they were deeply interested in the answer.

The earnest way in which they assured me that the crops had not been good for many years, because the spirits were angry at the ancient rites having fallen into disuse, showed that he had worked upon them to



believe in the necessity of a head being procured, but my answer was so discouraging that they never ventured to mention the subject to Sir James Brooke. Mita was afterwards removed from his office, to the great satisfaction of the tribe.

Our cottage was just twelve hundred and thirty feet above the level of the sea, and had a pure and cool atmosphere about it, but the most remarkable spot near was a natural bath-house. In a ravine close by, rose a huge rock, seventy feet in length by forty in breadth; somewhat of the shape of a mighty but very blunt wedge. The thicker end was buried in the ground, the centre, supported on either side by two rocks, left a cave beneath, while the thinner part, thrust up at an angle of thirty degrees, overshadowed a natural basin, improved by art, at which we bathed. A rill that glided from under the rock supplied us plentifully with cool, clear water. It was a beautiful spot, a charming natural grotto, in which to pass the burning midday hours; twenty or thirty people could sit there with comfort, and admire the vegetation that grew thickly around, but yet affording glimpses of distant hills through the trees.

That spot for years was our boast; there was no bathing-place like Peninjau, no water so cool, no air so bracing. Once our grotto fell to a discount, and that was when some one unromantically brought from our basin a huge leech, fifteen inches long, but that was the only intruder that ever invaded the sacred spot. I may say that we never enter the basin when we bathe in these places, or at our houses, but pour small buckets of water on our heads, and let it run

over our bodies ; it is the most refreshing plan. But up country, in the cool mountain streams, we always take a plunge into the water.

At night, looking south, the prospect appeared quite lively with fires and flashing lights ; these came from the villages of Chinese gold-workers occupying the valleys below. They extended irregularly for about ten miles until they reached their chief town of Bau, romantically situated among limestone hills, presenting perpendicular sides.

To the eastward was one of the noblest valleys in Sarawak, perfectly uninhabited. At the nearer end the Sirambau Dayaks occasionally had a farm, but thousands of acres, untrodden by man, lay there uncultivated.

To the left of Sirambau are some very fine Tapang trees, in which the bees generally build their nests ; they are considered private property, and a Dayak from a neighbouring tribe venturing to help himself of this apparently wild honey and wax, would be punished for theft. The tribe, also, is rich in edible birds'-nests, while the Peninjaus are becoming wealthy from the great extent of their fruit-groves. In former times, the Malays used to gather them without thinking of asking permission, but now the government has forbidden this practice, the amount realized by the Dayaks is, for Borneo, something surprising. One good fruit season, a hundred and fifty families realized two pounds sterling each, enough to buy rice to last them six months.

I have said I am more familiar with the manners and customs of these Dayaks than with those of any

others, and having had the advantage of receiving full and careful replies to a list of queries I addressed to all those I thought likely to be able to give me assistance, particularly from the Rev. Mr. Chalmers, the able missionary who formerly resided there, and whose departure from Borneo all sincerely regret, I will enter an account of the ways of the Land Dayaks, noticing in what manner they vary from those of the surrounding tribes. Though I am greatly indebted to Mr. Chalmers's notes, I by no means bind him to the opinions expressed, as we differ on some points, particularly regarding the belief in the Supreme Being.

*Births.*—After pregnancy is declared a ceremony takes place.\* Two priestesses† attend, a fowl is killed, rice provided, and for two nights they howl and chant, during which time the apartment is “pamali,” or interdicted. The husband of the pregnant woman, until the time of her delivery, may not do work with any sharp instrument, except what may be absolutely necessary for the cultivation of his farm; he may not tie things together with rattans, or strike animals, or fire guns, or do anything of a violent character—all such things being imagined to exercise a malign influence on the formation and development of the unborn child. The delivery is attended by an old woman, called a “Penyading,” or midwife. A fowl is killed, the family tabooed for eight days, during which time

\* Dayak,—beruri.

† The Land Dayak word “borich,” and the Sea Dayak “manang,” are generally translated male and female doctors, but from their employment and duties, I think “priest” and “priestess” would better convey the idea.

the unfortunate husband is dieted on rice and salt, and may not go out in the sun, or even bathe for four days; the rice and salt diet is to prevent the *baby's* stomach swelling to an unnatural size.

*Courtship*.—Besides the ordinary attention which a young man is able to pay to the girl he desires to make his wife—as helping her in her farm work, and in carrying home her load of vegetables or wood, as well as in making her little presents, as a ring, or some brass chain work with which the women adorn their waists, or even a petticoat—there is a very peculiar testimony of regard, which is worthy of note. About nine or ten at night, when the family is supposed to be fast asleep within the musquito curtains in the private apartment, the lover quietly slips back the bolt by which the door is fastened on the inside and enters the room on tip-toe. He goes to the curtains of his beloved, gently awakes her, and she on hearing who it is, rises at once, and they sit conversing together, and making arrangements for the future in the dark over a plentiful supply of sirih-leaf and betel-nut, which it is the gentleman's duty to provide. If when awoke the young lady rises and accepts the prepared betel-nut, happy is the lover, for his suit is in a fair way to prosper, but if on the other hand she rises and says, "Be good enough to blow up the fire," or to light the lamp (a bamboo filled with resin), then his hopes are at an end, as that is the usual form of dismissal. Of course if this kind of nocturnal visit is frequently repeated, the parents do not fail to discover it, although it is a point of honour among them to take no notice of their visitor, and if they approve of him matters

take their course, but if not, they use their influence with their daughter to ensure the utterance of the fatal "please blow up the fire." It is said on good authority that these nocturnal visits but seldom result in immorality.

*Betrothment.*—There is no ceremony at a betrothment, the bridegroom expectant (if a young bachelor) generally presents his betrothed with a set of three small boxes\* made of bamboo, in which are placed the tobacco, gambir, and lime, with the sirih-leaf and betel-nut, and sometimes also with a cheap ring or two purchased from the Malays, or in the Sarawak bazaar.

*Marriage.*—At a marriage, a fowl is killed, rice boiled, and a feast made by the relations of the bride and bridegroom. The bridegroom then generally betakes himself to the apartments of his wife's parents or relations, and becomes one of the family. Occasionally, as for example when the bride has many brothers and sisters, or when the bridegroom is the support of aged parents, or of younger brothers and sisters, the bride enters and becomes one of the family of her husband. It is a rare occurrence for a young couple at once to commence housekeeping on their own account; the reason is, that the labours of a young man go to augment the store of the head of the family in which he lives, be it that of his parents or others, and not till their death can he claim any share of the property in rice, jars, crockery, or gongs, which by his industry he has helped to create; yet most young men now have generally a small hoard

\* Dekan.

of copper coin, or even a few dollars, which they have acquired by trading, or by working for Europeans, Malays, or Chinese during the intervals of farm labour.

*Burial.*—When a Dayak dies the whole village is tabooed for a day; within a few hours of death the body is rolled up in the sleeping mat of the deceased, and carried by the “Peninu,” or sexton of the village, to the place of burial or burning.\* The body is accompanied for a little distance from the village by the women, uttering a loud and melancholy lament. In the Peninjau tribe the women follow the corpse a short way down the path below the village to the spot where it divides, one branch leading to the burning ground, the other to the Chinese town of Siniawan. Here they mount upon a broad stone, and weep and utter doleful cries, till the sexton and his melancholy burden have disappeared from view. Curiously enough, the top of this stone is hollowed, and the Dayaks declare that this has been occasioned by the tears of their women, which during many ages have fallen so abundantly, and so often, as to wear away the stone by their continual dropping.

In Western Sarawak the custom of burning the dead is universal, in the districts near the Samarahan, they are indifferently burnt or buried, and when the Sadong is reached the custom of cremation ceases, the Dayaks of the last river being in the habit of burying their dead. In the grave a cocoa-nut and areca-nut are thrown, and a small basket of rice, and that one containing the chewing condiments of the deceased are hung up near the grave, and if he were

\* Tinungan.

a noted warrior, a spear is stuck in the ground close by. The above articles of food are for the sustenance of the soul in his passage to the other world.

The graves are very shallow, and not unfrequently the corpse is rooted up and devoured by wild pigs. The burning also is not unfrequently very inefficiently performed, and portions of the bones and flesh of a deceased person have been brought back by the dogs and pigs of the village to the space below the very houses of the relatives. In times of epidemic disease, and when the deceased is very poor, or the relatives do not feel inclined to be at much expense for the sexton's services, corpses are not unfrequently thrown into some solitary piece of jungle not far from the village, and there left. The Dayaks have very little respect for the bodies of the departed, though they have an intense fear of their ghosts.

The office of sexton is hereditary, descending from father to son, and when the line fails great indeed is the difficulty of inducing another family to undertake its unpleasant duties, involving, as it is supposed, too familiar an association with the dead and the other world to be at all beneficial. Though the prospect of fees is good, and perhaps every family in the village offers six gallons of unpounded rice to start the sexton elect in his new, and certainly useful career, among the Quop Dayaks it is difficult to find a candidate. The usual burial fee is one jar, valued at a rupee, though if great care be bestowed on the interment, a dollar is asked; at other places as much as two dollars are occasionally demanded, and obtained when the corpse is offensive.

On the day of a person's death, a feast\* is given by the family to their relations; if the deceased be rich, a pig and a fowl are killed, but if poor, a fowl is considered sufficient. The apartment, and the family in which the death occurs, are tabooed for seven days and nights, and if the interdict be not rigidly kept, the ghost of the departed will haunt the house. Among the Silakau, the Lara, and the true Lundu tribes, the bodies of the elders and rich are burned, while the others are buried.

*Children.*—All children are very desirable in Dayak eyes. Mr. Chalmers thinks that if a Dayak could have but one child, he would prefer a female, as she will always assist in getting wood and water (labours held in little esteem by those males who have arrived at the age of puberty); and, moreover, at marriage a son may have to follow his wife, whereas a daughter obtains for her parents the benefit of her husband's labour and assistance; but my opinion is contrary, I think male children are generally desired.

*Female Chastity.*—The females are more chaste than those of the Malays, though the chiefs have many cases of adultery to settle, which do not, however, cause much excitement in the tribe.

*Divorces.*—They are very common, one can scarcely meet with a middle-aged Dayak who has not had two, and often three or more wives. Repudiation, which is generally done by a man or woman running away to the house of a near relation, takes place for the slightest cause—personal dislike or disappointments, a sudden quarrel, bad dreams, discontent with their partners'

\* Man buiya.



powers of labour or their industry, or in fact, any excuse which will help to give force to the expression, "[ ] do not want to live with him or her any longer."

A woman has deserted her husband when laid up with a bad foot, and consequently been unable to work, and has returned to him when recovered, but this is perhaps to obtain her food on easier terms. A lad once forced his mother to divorce her husband, the lad's stepfather, because the latter tried to get too much work out of his stepson, and let his own children by a former marriage remain idle. The stepson did not understand why he should contribute to the support of his half-brothers, so he told his mother she must leave her husband, or he would leave her, and live with his late father's relatives. She preferred her son's society to her husband's.

In fact, marriage among the Dayaks is a business of partnership for the purpose of having children, dividing labour, and by means of their offspring, providing for their old age. It is, therefore, entered into and dissolved almost at pleasure. If a husband divorces his wife, except for the sake of adultery, he has to pay her a fine of two small jars, or about two rupees. If a woman puts away her husband, she pays him a jar, or one rupee. If a wife commits adultery the husband can put her away if he pleases; though if she be a strong, useful woman, he sometimes does not do so, and her lover pays him a fine of one "tajan," a large jar equal to twelve small jars, valued at twelve rupees. If a separation take place, the guilty wife also gives her husband about two rupees. If a husband commit adultery, the wife can divorce him,

and fine his paramour eight rupees, but she gets nothing from her unfaithful spouse. There is one cause of divorce, where the blame rests on neither party, but on their superstitions. When a couple are newly married, if a deer, or gazelle, or a mouse deer utter a cry at night near the house in which the pair are living, it is an omen of ill—they must separate, or the death of one must ensue. This might be a great trial to a European lover; but the Dayaks take the matter very philosophically.

Mr. Chalmers mentioned to me the case of a young Peninjau man, who was divorced from his wife on the third day after marriage. The previous night a deer had uttered its warning cry, and separate they must. The morning of the divorce he chanced to go into the “head-house,” and there sat the bridegroom contentedly at work.

“Why are you here?” he was asked, as the “head-house” is frequented by bachelors and boys only; “what news of your new wife?”

“I have no wife; we were separated this morning, because the deer cried last night.”

“Are you sorry?”

“Very sorry.”

“What are you doing with that brass wire?”

“Making perik”—the brass chain-work which the women wear round their waists—“for a young woman whom I want to get for my new wife.”

## CHAPTER VI.

SOCIAL LIFE OF THE LAND DAYAKS—*Continued.*

*Religion.*—This principally consists of a number of superstitious observances. They are given up to the fear of ghosts, and in the propitiation of these by small offerings and certain ceremonies consists the principal part of their worship. But though this is the case, I am quite convinced that they have a firm, though not clear belief in the existence of one Supreme Being, who is above all, and over all, and in this lies the best hope of the missionary. If we could trace back the origin of their superstitions, we should probably find that many of their inferior spirits are simply heroes of old who have assumed the form of demi-gods; in fact, all my inquiries among the wild tribes confirm me in the opinion that they believe in a Supreme Being. I have mentioned in my *Limbang Journal* old Japer saying,—“When I speak of the God of the Pakatan tribe, I mean Him who made the heavens, the earth, the streams, and man.” I have always thought that the three inferior spirits mentioned by Mr. Chalmers in the extract I will give—Tenabi, Iang, and Jirong—are merely agents of Tapa, and occasionally their subordinate position is

overlooked by the Dayak narrators. It reminds one of the three powers in the Hindoo religion, "Brahma," "Vishnu," and "Siva," issuing from the Godhead Bram—and, in the Dayak religion, "Tenabi," the maker of the material world; Iang the Instructor, and Jirong, the Renovator and Destroyer, emanating from the Godhead Tapa, the great Creator and Preserver. Before proceeding, I will give the substance of Mr. Chalmers's account of the religion of the Land Dayaks; I may also premise by saying, that the Sarawak Land Dayaks call their God "Tapa," the Silakaus and Laras, "Jewata," and the Sea Dayaks, "Batara."

In common with many other barbarous tribes, their religious system relates principally to this life. They are like the rest of mankind, continually liable to physical evils, poverty, misfortune, sickness, and these they try to avert from themselves by the practice of ancient customs, which are supposed to be effectual for the purpose. This system may be classed as follows:—

The killing of pigs and fowls, the flesh of which is eaten, small portions being set aside with rice for the spiritual powers; and from the blood mixed with spittle, turmeric, and cocoa-nut water, a filthy mess is concocted, and called physick, with which the people attending the feast are anointed on the head and face. Dancing by the elders and the priestesses about a kind of bamboo altar, erected on these occasions either in the long front verandah, or on the exterior platform of one of the houses, round which the offerings are placed, always accompanied by the beating of all the gongs and drums of the tribe by the young lads, and

chanting by the priestesses. The "pamali," or taboo of an apartment, house, or village, for one, two, four, eight, or even sixteen days, during which, in the case of a village, no stranger can enter it; in the case of a house, no one beside the families residing therein; and in the case of an apartment, no one out of the family.

Mr. Chalmers says that it cannot be denied that they have some belief in a Supreme God, who is called "Tapa," the Creator or Maker, though their idea of Him as a moral governor is very hazy and confused. They possess also some glimmerings of a future existence, though scarcely any idea of a future state of rewards and punishments. The following are a few particulars of the Dayak theology.

There are four chief spirits: "Tapa," who created men and women, and preserves them in life; "Tenabi," who made the earth, and, except the human race, all things therein, and still causes it to flourish; "Iang," or "Iing," who first instructed the Dayaks in the mysteries of their religion, and who superintends its performance; "Jirong," who looks after the propagation of the human species, and also causes them to die of sickness or accident. "Iang" is frequently associated with "Tapa," and "Tapa Iang" often stands for the Supreme Being.

An intelligent man of the tribe Setang, gave another account. He said that "Tapa" and "Tenabi" are but different names for the same Great Being, and that with Him is associated "Jirong," the Lord of birth and death. That when Tapa made the world, he first created "Iang," then the spirits "Triu" and

“Komang,” and then man. That man and the spirits were at first equal, and fought on fair terms, but that on one woful occasion, the spirits got the better of man, and rubbed charcoal in his eyes, which made him no longer able to see his spirit foes, except in the case of certain gifted persons, as the priest, and so placed him at their mercy.

With respect to a future state, the common Dayak story is that when a man dies, he becomes a spirit, and lives in the jungle, or (this Mr. Chalmers heard in one of the dead body burning tribes) that as the smoke of the funeral pile of a good man rises, the soul ascends with it to the sky, and that the smoke from the pile of a wicked man descends, and his soul with it is borne down to the earth, and through it to the regions below. Another version is, that when a man dies a natural death, his soul on leaving the body becomes a spirit, and haunts the place of burial or burning. When a spirit dies, for spirits too, it would seem, are subject unto death, it enters the hole of Hades, and coming out thence again becomes a Bejawi. In course of time the “Bejawi” dies, and lives once more as a “Begutur;” but when a “Begutur” dies, the spiritual essence of which it consists enters the trunks of trees, and may be seen there damp and blood-like in appearance, and has a personal and sentient existence no longer.

I have introduced this account, and it is curious to trace in it a similarity to the Buddhist religion professed in Siam. There, they believe that after passing through many and various transmigrations, they will, as the last and best existence, sink into “neiban,” and be

lost to all sense, and fade away without any longer retaining personality.

With regard to a future state, the Dayaks point to the highest mountain in sight as the abode of their departed friends.

The spirits are divided into two classes, "Umot," spirits by nature, and "Mino," as I understood it to be, ghosts of departed men.

Umot.—The "Trui" and "Komang" live amid the noble old forests on the tops of lofty hills. They delight in war and bloodshed, and always come down to be present at the Dayak "head-feasts." They are described as of a fierce and wild appearance, being covered with coarse red hair like an orang-utan. By some, the "Komang" are said to be the spirits of departed heroes, associated after death for their valour with the war-loving "Trui." "Umot Sisi" is a harmless kind of spirit which frequents the villages at night to look for the fragments of food which have fallen through the open flooring of their houses, and who is heard after dark munching away below. "Umot Perubak" cause scarcity among the Dayaks, by coming invisibly and eating the rice from the pot at mealtime, and their appetite is insatiable. "Umot Perusong" and "Tibong" come slyly and devour the rice which is stored within a receptacle made of the bark of some gigantic tree, and is in the form of a vat. It is kept in the garrets of the houses, and a large one will contain a hundred and fifty bushels, and the family live in constant fear that these voracious spirits will visit their store and entirely consume it.

"Mino Buau" are the ghosts of those who have

been killed in war. "These are very vicious and inimical to the living ;—they dwell in the jungle, and have the power of assuming the form of beasts or headless men. A Quop Dayak declared he met with one. He was walking through the jungle, and saw what he thought was a squirrel sitting on the large roots of a tree which overhung a small stream. He had a spear in his hand, this he threw at the animal, and thought he had struck it ; he ran towards the spot where it had apparently fallen, when to his horror it faced him, rose up, and was transformed into a dog. The dog walked on a few paces, and then turning into a human shape, sat down slowly on the trunk of a fallen tree—head there was none. The spectre body was parti-coloured, and at the top drawn up to a point. The Dayak was smitten with a great fear, and away he rushed home and fell into a violent fever ; the priest was called, and he pronounced that the patient's soul had been summoned away from its corporeal abiding place by the spirit, so he went to seek it, armed with his magic charms. Midway between the village and place where the "Buau" had appeared, the fugitive soul was overtaken and induced to pause, and having been captured by the priest, was brought back to its body, and thrust into its place through an invisible hole in the head : the next day the fever was gone.

This shows how the priests practise on the ignorance and superstition of the people. Mr. Gomez, being well aware of it, used his utmost efforts to convert the principal "Manang" or priest of the Lundu branch of the "Sibuyaus," and succeeded ; since then there have been many baptized. This, however, is not



the principal effect; he has enlisted the learned man on his side instead of against him, and I have little doubt of his ultimately winning over the whole tribe of that section of Sea Dayaks.

Some accuse the Buau of being occasionally guilty of running off with women. In former times, a Dayak named Temunyan was, in her husband's absence, carried off. On his return he searched for, and found the spirit, slew him by a trick and recovered his wife; not, however, until she had suffered violation. She was pregnant by the Buau, and in due time she brought forth a son—a horrible monster, which her enraged husband chopped up into small pieces, and these immediately turned into leeches, with which the jungles are to this day unpleasantly infested.

“M●o Pajabun.”—These are the ghosts of those who meet with an accidental death. Their name seems to be derived from a Dayak word meaning “To long for,” because it is said they pass their time in useless wailings over their hard fate.

“Mino Kok ‘Anak.”—The spirits of women who have died in childbed. They delight to mount high trees, and to startle belated Dayaks by horrible noises as they are hurrying home in the twilight. There is also a ghost or spirit—whether “Mino” or “Umot,” I have not ascertained—known to the “Peninjaus,” which lives amid the holes of the rocks on the hills; it is called “Sedying,” and on a rainy day may be heard in its cave shivering and bemoaning as if suffering from the ague.

I have already mentioned that the custom “pamali,” called by the Land Dayak “porikh,” obtains among all

the tribes, and is constantly practised. To propitiate the superior spirits, they shut themselves up in their houses a certain number of days, and by that, among other means, hope to avert sickness, to cure a favourite child, or to restore their own health. They also have recourse to it when the cry of the gazelle is heard behind them, or when their omen birds utter unfavourable warnings. They likewise place themselves under this interdict at full moon, at the planting of rice, at harvest home, and upon many other occasions. During this time, they appear to remain in their houses, in order to eat, drink, and sleep; but their eating must be moderate, and often consists of nothing but rice and salt. These interdicts are of very different durations and importance. Sometimes, as at the harvest home, the whole tribe is compelled to observe it, and then no one must leave the village; at other times it only extends to a family, or to a single individual. It is also considered important that no stranger should break the taboo by entering the village, the house, or the apartment, placed under interdict. If any one should do so intentionally, he would subject himself to a fine.

The taboo lasts from one to sixteen days, according to the importance attached to the event. The animals used in the sacrifice are fowls and pigs, and I hear also that even dogs in certain tribes are occasionally employed. The fowls and pigs are eaten, but the dogs not, the blood only being required in their incantations. When a fowl is killed a taboo may last one, two, or four days; when a pig—and then it is usually a very important occasion—the ceremony may last four, eight, or sixteen days.

People under interdict may not bathe, meddle with fire, or employ themselves about their ordinary occupations. In conversation you continually hear even the Malays say, "It is pamali," or interdicted by their superstitions, but if contrary to their religion they say "haram."

I will notice a few things which the Dayaks consider must not be done by them ; for instance, most are not allowed to eat the flesh of horned animals, as cattle and goats, and many tribes extend the prohibition to the wild deer. In their refusal to touch the flesh of cows and bulls they add another illustration of the theory that their religion is indirectly derived from the Hindu, or if not actually derived, greatly influenced by their intercourse with its disciples. They say, that some of their ancestors, in the transmigration of souls, were formerly metamorphosed into these animals ; and they slyly, or innocently add, that the reason why the Mohamedan Malays will not touch pork is, that they are afraid to eat their forefathers, who were changed into the unclean animal. It has often struck me that the origin of many of their superstitions arose from the greediness of the elders ; as in some of the tribes they, together with the women and children, but not the sturdy young men, may eat eggs. In other instances the very old men and the women may eat of the flesh of the deer, while the young men and warriors of the tribe are debarred from venison for fear it should render them as timid as the graceful hind.

The taboo which prevents certain families from consuming the flesh of snakes and other kinds of reptiles, most probably arose from some incident in

the life of one of their ancestors, in which the rejected beast played a prominent part. It is religiously forbidden to all those intending to engage in a pig-hunt from meddling with oil before the chase, for fear the game should thus slip through their fingers. I may add, if a certain kind of bird flies through a house the inhabitants desert it; as they likewise do if a drop of blood be seen sprinkled on the floor, unless they can prove whence it came. The taboo is often denoted by a bundle of spears being tied up at the entrance of a stream, or by a rattan being drawn across its mouth.

In addition to the incantations (Beruri) which accompany every feast (Gawei), there are special ones on occasions of sickness both in men and rice. The Dayak idea of life is this, that in mankind, animals, and rice there is a living principle called "semungat" or "semungi;" that sickness is caused by the temporary absence, and death by the total departure of this principle from the body. Hence the object of their ceremonies is to bring back the departed souls; and some of the feasts are held to secure the soul of the rice, which if not so detained, the produce of their farms would speedily rot and decay. At sowing time, a little of the principle of life of the rice, which at every harvest is secured by their priests, is planted with their other seeds, and is thus propagated and communicated.

Sickness among mankind is occasionally caused by spirits inflicting on people invisible wounds with invisible spears, indeed, they sometimes enter men's bodies and drive out the soul. As a rule, to be ill

is to have been smitten by a spirit,\* for it is these implacable foes of mankind who under all circumstances entice forth and endeavour to carry away the souls of men. If any one in his wanderings through the jungle is wounded or killed by the spring trap† set near the farms to destroy pigs who may attempt to break through into the fields, it is because the spirit of the trap has caused darkness to pass over his eyes, so that he should not see the regular warning mark, consisting of two bamboos crossed, which tells of the neighbourhood of danger.

To return, however, to the incantations by which the inimical spirits are propitiated or foiled in their machinations. They are three: "Nyibaiyan," or the ceremony for restoring health. At this only one fowl is killed; two priestesses are the actors, and they spend their time chanting monotonously; the taboo lasts two nights. The invalid and the person who prepares the magic ointment (a near relative of the patient) are the only persons subject to its restraints.

"Berobat Pinya" is also for sickness. At this one priest and four or five priestesses attend, the interdict lasts four days, and one pig and one fowl are killed. Outside the door of the family apartment in which the incantation is held are gathered together, in a winnowing basket, an offering of fowls, yams, and pork, fowl and pig's blood in a cup, boiled rice and

\* "Kena antu."

† "Peti," made by bending back a sharp bamboo spear. An animal touching a stick, placed across an opening, lets fly the spring, and the spear is driven through the unheeding stranger, whether human or animal.

sirih-leaf, and areca-nut : these are for the various spirits. On the first day of the incantation two priestesses pretend to fight with each other with drawn swords, which they wave and slash about in so furious a manner, as at once to put to flight the trembling ghost. After this display of valour chanting begins, accompanied by the music of a small gong and a drum, the latter beaten by the priest ; this continues for a day and night. Towards midnight he proceeds to get the soul of the patient. Carefully wrapping up a small cup in a white cloth, he places it amidst the offerings before mentioned, then, with a torch in one hand and a circlet of beads and tinkling hawk bells in the other, he stalks about shaking his charms. After a little time he orders one of the admiring spectators to look in the cup previously wrapped up in white cloth, and sure enough there the soul always is, in the form of a bunch of hair to vulgar eyes, but to the initiated in shape and appearance like a miniature human being. This is supposed to be thrust into a hole in the top of the patient's head, invisible to all but the learned man. He has thus recovered the man's soul, or, as it may be called, the principle of life that was departing from him.

The Land Dayaks of Sarawak say they have only one soul ; the " Sibuyaus " talk of several ; but their souls, as shown by the priest to the friends of the patient, bear a suspicious resemblance to the seeds of the cotton plant.

" Berobat Sisab " has a similar aim to the above. At this, one priest, but no priestess, is present. The

priest first makes a bamboo altar\* in the common verandah outside the door of the patient's room, round which are placed offerings, and a pig and a fowl are killed. The interdict lasts for eight days. For two there is beating of gongs and drums, and dancing by the man who makes the charm, usually some relation of the sick person. On the first night the soul is recovered, and the patient washed in the milk of the cocoa-nut. I have often been present when these ceremonies were going on; it is astonishing that any patient should recover, stunned as he must be by the beating and clanging of these ear-splitting instruments close to him. It has effectually prevented my closing my eyes, and the melancholy wail of the women is sufficient, one would imagine, to drive hope itself from the bedside of the sufferer.

The feasts and incantations connected with farming operations are as follows:—first, in the midst of cutting down the jungle for a fresh rice plantation; and, second, when it is set on fire. These are small affairs, the interdict lasting but one day, and only a fowl being killed. They are called “Mekapau,” only one gong and one drum are beaten; and also “nyiraŋgan,” because a bamboo altar is built by the road-side, and upon it a small offering of rice and blood is placed for the spirit. The second feast is to drive away all evil influences from the earth, when ready for the seed.

The third feast† is the blessing of the seed before planting. It is brought out, and the priestesses wave

\* “Sikurung,” a bamboo altar.

† “Mamuk Benih.”

over it their flat brush-like wands, which consist of the undeveloped fruit of the areca palm, stripped of its sheath, and is in itself one of the prettiest objects in the world, and in its natural bursting spreads around the parent stem a delicious perfume that scents a whole grove. They thus expel all malign influences; the interdict lasts two nights, one fowl is killed, and there is music and dancing.

During the growth of the rice, if the rats be making havoc among it, or the pale green leaf appear blighted, there are similar ceremonies to awe the vermin, and charm back the colour to the plant. But the harvest feasts are the great days; there are three:—The feast of first fruits,\* when the priestesses, accompanied by a gong and a drum, go in procession to the farms and gather several bunches of the ripe padi. These are brought back to the village, washed in cocoa-nut water, and laid round a bamboo altar, which at the harvest feasts is erected in the common room of the largest house, and decorated with white cloth and red streamers, so as to present a very gay appearance, and is hung around with the sweet-smelling blossom of the areca palm. This feast and interdict last two days; only fowls are killed, dancing and gong-beating going on night and day, and when it is over, the Dayaks may set themselves to repair their bamboo platforms outside the houses, on which the rice is trodden out from the ear, and then dried in the sun. They may now also gather in their crops.

The second feast† is a more important affair: it is held about the middle of harvest, and lasts four days;

\* “Nyipa 'an.”

† “Man Sawa,” or “Nytungid.”



fowls and a pig are killed, and dancing and beating of gongs go on almost continually. The first part of this feast is celebrated, not in the village, but in a shed at some distance from it, frequently built by the roadside, and sometimes on the very summits of the hills on which the villages are situated. Although strangers are forbidden to approach the place during these ceremonies, yet at Sirambau I have often been invited to be present during this and the other feasts. They choose a lovely spot for the erection of their shed, which is tastefully decorated with green boughs and climbing plants, and situated under the loftiest fruit-trees I have ever seen; and here as in other villages, around the spot where the shed was erected were planted yellow bamboos, and their golden tapering stems and graceful feathery tufts are a charming and pleasing contrast to the rude leaf walls and roof of the neighbouring building.

At this, and at the third and last harvest feast, the soul of the rice is secured. The way of obtaining it varies in different tribes. In the Quop district it is done by the chief-priest alone; first, in the long and broad verandah where the altar is erected, and afterwards in each separate family apartment. Sometimes it is performed by day, sometimes by night; and the process is this: the priest, fixing his eyes on some object visible only to him, takes in one hand his bundle of charms and in the other a second composed of pigs' and bears' and dogs' tusks and teeth, and large opaque-coloured beads; a little gold dust is also necessary in this ceremony, during which he calls aloud for white cloth; when it is brought and spread

before him, he waves his charms towards the invisible object in the air, and then shakes it over the white cloth, into which there fall a few grains of rice, which Tapa, in reward for their offerings and invocations, sends down to them. This is the soul, and it is immediately wrapped up with great care and laid among the offerings around the altar.

The gold dust and white cloth are generally furnished at their earnest request by the government, as the Dayaks think it exercises a beneficial effect to receive it from white men. It used to be supplied by the Malay rulers.

In some tribes it is a far more exciting spectacle, especially when done at night. A large shed is erected outside the village, and lighted by huge fires inside and out, which cast a ruddy glow over the dense mass of palms surrounding the houses; while gongs and drums are crashing around a high and spacious altar near the shed, where a number of gaily-dressed men and women are dancing with slow and stately step and solemn countenances, some bearing in their hands lighted tapers, some brass salvers on which are offerings of rice, and others closely-covered baskets, the contents of which are hidden from all but the initiated. The corner-posts of the altar are lofty bamboos, whose leafy summits are yet green and rustle in the wind; and from one of these hangs down a long, narrow streamer of white cloth. Suddenly elders and priests rush to it, seize hold of its extremity, and amid the crashing sound of drums and gongs and the yells of spectators, begin dancing and swaying themselves backwards and forwards, and to and fro. An elder

springs on the altar, and begins violently to shake the tall bamboos, uttering as he does so shouts of triumph, which are responded to by the swaying bodies of those below; and amid all this excitement, small stones, bunches of hair and grains of rice, fall at the feet of the dancers, and are carefully picked up by watchful attendants. The rice is the soul sought for, and the ceremony ends by several of the oldest priestesses falling, or pretending to fall, to the earth senseless; where, till they recover, their heads are supported and their faces fanned by their younger sisters.

The third feast\* is held after the end of the harvest, when the year's crop has been carefully stowed away. A pig and fowls are killed, for four days gong-beating and dancing are kept up, and the taboo lasts for eight days. Sometimes no stranger may approach the village for sixteen days. At this period also the soul of the rice is likewise secured, which is to ensure the non-rotting of the crop. At this feast there is a general physicking of the children. They are washed with cocoa-nut water, and then laid down in a row in the common room where the feast is held, and scarcely suffered to move about for four days. At this time also the elder priestesses physic their younger sisters, and children of a tender age are entered among the number of this learned and accomplished body; partly because admission into it is supposed to secure them against violent sickness. For each one who is now to be initiated, a young cocoa-nut is obtained, and their elder sisters cause those on whom they are to exercise their power to lie down in a line along the room, and

\* Nyishupen, or "nyipidang menyupong."

to cover themselves with long sleeping sheets. The cocoa-nuts belonging to the patients are then taken into the hands of the priestesses, and with them they run violently about the long room, tossing them up and down and to and fro. In some villages they are rolled in soot and oil, and then kicked furiously about from one priestess to the other. During this part of the process the room presents a curious scene. Here some six or seven gaily-dressed women are rushing frantically up and down, tossing in their hands the heavy young cocoa-nuts; there a dozen old women are moving to and fro on a rude swing suspended from the rafters, and howling dolefully round the altar. A number of others are shrieking and dancing; while from the farther end of the room beyond the line of prostrate patients resounds a clatter of gongs and drums, beaten as vigorously as twenty pair of young hands can apply themselves to the work.

One by one the old priestesses cease their wild running backwards and forwards, and each in succession presents herself before an elder of the tribe, who stands, chopper in hand, over a mortar, into the hollow of which each in turn places her cocoa-nut. With one blow the old man splits the nut, and out gushes the water. If it simply fall into the mortar, the prospect is good, but if it shoot up towards the roof, then evil is the lot of the patient whose cocoa-nut it may be, for there is sickness before her in the coming year. When a cocoa-nut is split, she to whom it belongs is raised from her recumbent position and the water is poured over her; she is then laid down again and carefully wrapped up in her sheet.

When all have been so treated a lighted taper is waved over the prostrate, motionless patients, and a form of words chanted, and then the ceremony is concluded by the head priestess going round and blowing into the face of each of the patients; after which they are allowed to chatter and amuse themselves, but are confined to the long room, in company with the elders and such of the children as had been previously subjected to the ceremony, until the close of the interdict.

*Head-Feasts.*—These are held only after some new heads have been added to the ghastly trophies of the bachelor's house; consequently among the Dayaks of Sarawak there has not been a feast for many years, except those celebrated over the heads of the rebellious Chinese killed in 1857, who, confident in their firearms, attempted to capture the villages on the mountain, their chief object being to burn down Sir James Brooke's cottage. They offered to cease their attack if the Dayaks would put fire to it themselves; but they refused, and defended their steep paths by the aid of barricades. The Chinese were foiled and driven back to the plain, and were pursued by the mountaineers, who inflicted heavy loss upon them. Chinese heads, however, are esteemed of little value in comparison with those of their ancient enemies. The head-feast is the great day of the young bachelors. The head-house and village are decorated with green boughs, and the heads to be feasted are brought out from their very airy position, being hung from one of the beams, where they rattle together at every breath of wind, and are put into a rice measure in some very prominent place. The whole population

are robed in their best, the young men in red jackets, yellow and red head-dresses, and gay waist-cloths or trousers.

For four days and four nights an almost incessant beating of gongs and drums is kept up, and dances are performed by the young men only. The priestesses are decked out in their usual style, but upon this occasion their occupation is gone. Strong drinks, made from rice or the fruit of the tampui-tree, and also from the gomuti palm, flow freely ; shrieks, yells, laughter, and shoutings, are heard in all directions, and the whole village seems given up to riot and dissipation. The interdict lasts eight days, two pigs are killed, and as many fowls as they can afford. An offering of food is made to the heads, and their spirits, being thus appeased, cease to entertain malice against, or to seek to inflict injury upon, those who have got possession of the skull which formerly adorned the now forsaken body.

A curious custom prevails among the young men at this feast. They cut a cocoa-nut shell into the form of a cup, and adorn it with red and black dye. Into one side of it they fasten a rudely carved likeness of a bird's head, and into the other the representation of its tail. The cup is filled with arrack, and the possessor performs a short wild dance with it in his hands, and then with a yell leaps before some chosen companion, and presents it to him to drink. Thus the "loving cup" is passed around among them, and it need not be said that the result is in many cases partial, though seldom excessive, intoxication.

Before leaving the subject of feasts and incantations,

I will mention some of their 'occasional ceremonies. They perform them on account of a bad dream, any threatening evil, or because of actual sickness ; sometimes, also, by way of precaution, but this is only after harvest, when they have nothing better to do. The theory of their ceremonies appears to be this: that the offering of food made to the spirits assuages their malice and secures their departure, these spirits being considered the proximate cause of nearly all the evils to which they are subjected.

The minor ceremonies are called "nyirañgan;" because a bamboo altar\* is erected by the roadside; a fowl killed near it, part of which, with rice and betel-nut, is offered upon it, and the taboo is only for a day. If any one meets with an accidental death in the jungle, a ceremony is gone through near the spot, and at this a pig is occasionally killed, but in all such cases the taboo lasts only one day. If during farming time a tree fall across the path, a ceremony is held, and all whose farms are in that direction are tabooed. If during harvest the basket into which the ears of rice are cut be upset, a fowl is killed, and the family to whom the basket belongs is tabooed. Again, when the Government rice-tax is paid, there is a ceremony. On this occasion a shed is erected just at the entrance to the village, and in addition to the offerings of food, it is hung with a number of split cocoa-nut shells, which the spirits are supposed to appropriate as gongs.

*Images.*—Although the Dayaks adhere with great strictness to the command not to make any graven

\* Sirangan, also a bamboo altar.

image for purposes of worship, yet in some tribes they are in the habit of forming a rude figure of a naked man and woman, which they place opposite to each other on the path to the farms. On their heads are head-dresses of bark, by their sides is the betel-nut basket, and in their hands a short wooden spear. These figures are said to be inhabited each by a spirit who prevents inimical influences from passing on to the farms, and likewise from the farms to the village, and evil betide the profane wretch who lifts his hand against them,—violent fever and sickness would be sure to follow.

Among the tribes of Western Sarawak the priestesses have made for them rude figures of birds. At the great harvest feasts they are hung up in bunches of ten or twenty in the long common room, carefully veiled with coloured handkerchiefs. They are supposed to become inhabited by spirits, and it is forbidden for any one to touch them, except the priestesses.

*Dreams.* — The Dayaks regard dreams as actual occurrences. They think that in sleep the soul sometimes remains in the body, and sometimes leaves it and travels far away, and that both when in and out of the body it sees, and hears, and talks, and altogether has a prescience given it, which, when the body is in its natural state, it does not enjoy. Fainting fits, or a state of coma, are thought to be caused by the departure or absence of the soul on some distant expedition of its own. When any one dreams of a distant land, as we exiles often do, the Dayaks think that our souls have annihilated space, and paid a flying visit to Europe during the night. Elders and



priestesses often assert that in their dreams they have visited the mansion of Tapa, and seen the Creator dwelling in a house like that of a Malay, the interior of which was adorned with guns, and gongs, and jars innumerable, Himself being clothed like a Dayak.

A dream of sickness to any member of a family always ensures a ceremony, and no one presumes to enter the priesthood, or to learn the art of a blacksmith, without being, or pretending to be, warned in a dream that he should undertake to learn it. I have known a man with only two children give his younger child to another who was no relation, because he dreamed that he must give it to him or the child would die. To dream of fruits, of bathing, or of fish is considered a good omen, but to dream of anything difficult or disagreeable is bad.

In dreams, also, "Tapa" and the spirits bestow gifts on men in the shape of magic stones, which, being washed in cocoa-nut milk, the latter forms one of the ingredients in the mass of blood and turmeric which is considered sacred, and is used to anoint the people at the harvest feasts. They are ordinary black pebbles, and there is nothing in their appearance to give an idea of their magic power and value. The ones in the Quop village were procured in a dream by the late chief "Bai Malam," in order to replace those lost in the civil wars which desolated the country before Sir James Brooke's arrival. He dreamt that a spirit came unto him and gave him a number of these sacred stones; and lo! when he awoke, they were in his hand. In some villages they are kept in a rude kind of wooden bowl covered and fastened

down, then fixed to the top of an iron-wood post in the middle of the outside platform. In others they are deposited in a small house built in the jungle, at some distance from the village, and all around it is sacred. I will relate an anecdote Mr. Chalmers told me :—

A Quop woman who had entered el Islam was staying at her village when the clergyman was there ; he had a number of coloured-glass marbles, and one of these this woman got hold of, and no doubt thought it very strange and wonderful. Next morning, when she awoke, she called loudly for white cloth, declaring at the same time that the late chief had appeared to her in the night and given her a sacred stone, at the same time producing the marble, and expected, no doubt, a good price for it from the Dayaks. But they are wiser now than of yore, and would have nothing to do with it ; and the young fellows, hearing how she had procured the marble, teased her on the subject until her departure.

*Ordeals.*—One of the ordeals practised among them is the following :—When a quarrel takes place which the elders find it impossible to settle, from conflicting evidence, the disputants are taken to a deep pool in a neighbouring stream, and both standing up to their necks in the water, at given signals plunge their heads below the surface : the first that rises to take breath, loses the case. Among the Land Dayaks, these ceremonies are not often practised. Another is by listening to the night-birds : if their cry be such as to be considered a favourable omen, the accused is declared not guilty ; if a bad omen, he is pronounced guilty

and must pay the fine demanded of him. The most common ordeal, however, is this: two wax tapers of equal size and length are prepared, they are lighted, and the owner of the one that is first extinguished, or burnt out, loses his case.

*Omens.*—If a man be going on a war expedition, and has a slip during his first day's journey, he must return to his village, especially if by the accident blood be drawn, for then, should he proceed, he has no prospect but wounds or death. If the accident occur during a long expedition, he must return to his last night's resting-place. In some tribes, if a deer cry near a party who are setting out on a journey, they will return. When going at night to the jungle, if the scream of a hawk, or an owl, or of a small kind of frog be heard, it is a sign that sickness will follow if the design be pursued; and, again, if the screech of the two former be heard in front of a party on the war-path, it is an evil sign, and they must return. Omens derived from the cry of birds are always sought previously to setting out on a journey, and before fixing on a spot to build new houses, or to prepare their farms.

The birds which give the omen for a journey are three, the "Kushah," "Kariak," and "Katupung." The traveller goes to a spot near the village where the feast sheds are usually erected, and sometimes a stage of bamboo is also made ready for the purpose. There he waits till he hears the oft-times long-awaited cries. When the "Kushah" or "Katupung" is heard on the right or the left only, or in front, no success will attend the journey; but if their cry be heard on the

left and then answered 'on the right, the traveller may start in peace. The "Kariak's" omen, however, is more important still. If heard on the right hand, the omen is good; if on the left, some slight inconvenience may follow; if behind, sickness, or death awaits him in the place to which he is bound. How common is the saying used, "I had a bad bird," to excuse every breach of engagement!

In house-building and farm-making all the birds of night are consulted. During the day, a place in the forest, which appears suitable, is fixed upon, and a small shed erected near. Some boiled rice, stained yellow with turmeric, and other offerings, are prepared, and at night a party takes them to the hut already built. This they enter, and an elder having invoked the spiritual powers, and cast the yellow rice in all directions, they await the omen. If a bird cry and twitter in front, and then fly past the hut towards the village, it is a good omen; but if the birds fly and alight near the hut, and there cry and twitter, evil and sickness await those who build or farm near, for many spirits have made that their dwelling-place.

The reason assigned for using these bird omens is that they are half Dayaks. Long ago, a spirit married a Dayak woman, and the result of the intercourse was the production of birds. These were tenderly cared for and cherished by the Dayaks, and, in return, from that time to this, they have ever warned their former protectors of impending evil, if duly consulted according to the customs which have descended to the tribes from their ancestors. I may add, that if during a

journey the Dayaks hear a good bird, they immediately stop and eat their sirih-leaf and betel-nut, to give time to their feathered monitor to pass.

Having thus given a brief account of Dayak ceremonies, feasting, and omens, I may conclude with a remark, that, of all the feasts and ceremonies, the most beneficial in its influence is the "Head-Feast." The object of them all is to make their rice grow well, to cause the forest to abound with wild animals, to enable their dogs and snares to be successful in securing game, to have the streams swarm with fish, to give health and activity to the people themselves, and to ensure fertility to their women. All these blessings, the possessing and feasting of a fresh head are supposed to be the most efficient means of securing. The very ground itself is believed to be benefited and rendered fertile, more fertile even than when the water in which fragments of gold presented by the Rajah have been washed, has been sprinkled over it; this latter charm, especially when mixed with the water which has been poured over the sacred stones, being, next to the possession of a newly acquired head, the greatest and the most powerful which the wisdom of the "men of old time" has devised for the benefit of their descendants. It may, therefore, be understood what importance the chief Mita attached to his request that permission should be given to him to seek another victim, and what influence he would have gained with the tribe had they secured these blessings by his means.

*Language.*—The various vocabularies collected by Mr. Chalmers prove that there is a great affinity

betwixt the Dayaks of Sarawak, Sadong, and some Sambas tribes. This connection is not so visible in the dialects of others, as, for instance, the Silakau tribe, who formerly lived on a stream of the same name between the Sambas and Pontianak. In the dialects of the Sea Dayaks, there are perhaps a few words radically the same as their correspondents in Land Dayak, but only a few which are not derived in common from Malay. In the dialect of the Dayaks of Banjermasin, I have also noticed words the same in form and meaning, but they are not very frequent.

My own experience has led me to the conviction that it is very difficult to draw any safe conclusion from the vocabularies generally collected, because the best are usually made through the medium of the Malay, and the worst by merely showing articles and guessing that the response is the name of the thing shown. I made a list of Bisaya words on the Limbang, another among the Ida'an at the foot of "Kina Balu." I was certain of a great affinity between the languages, as men from one tribe could freely converse with those of the other, though their dwellings were a hundred and fifty miles apart; but on comparing the written vocabularies, I found a surprising difference. Just before I left Borneo, I spoke to a Bisaya on the subject: he said, "Repeat me a few words of the Ida'an that are different." I did so. He answered, "I understand those words, but we don't often use them," and he instantly gave their meaning in Malay, to show that he did understand them.

My sudden and unexpected return to this country prevented my pursuing the investigation. I mention this circumstance to show that differences are often more apparent than real. Mr. Chalmers's vocabularies are trustworthy, as he can speak the Land Dayak freely.

*Deer.*—The Dayaks of the Quop district do not refuse to eat deer. The custom of doing so, however, obtains in Western Sarawak, but chiefly in the Singglih tribe, and then only among the young men.

As will be found mentioned in my account of Samarahan, they do so because deer's flesh produces in those who eat it faint hearts; and as I have elsewhere observed, the interdict on certain kinds of food to the young people is merely selfishness on the part of the elders to secure to themselves a greater share of the articles that are not plentiful. The Silakau and Lara Dayaks who have emigrated from Sambas into Lundu, do not eat the flesh of the deer, from an opinion that they descended from Dayak ancestors, but Mr. Chalmers, in his experience of the Sarawak Land Dayak, never heard of any prejudice existing against killing or even eating any animals except the faint-heartedness supposed to be produced by venison, nor did he notice that the serpent had any sacred character. Many people eat it; some, however, refuse, considering it foul-feeding.

The Sibuyau Dayaks of Lundu, from their greater intercourse with Malays and Chinese, and from the advantages they have derived from local self-government, and freely trading with the surrounding districts,

have lost most of their old superstitions, as I have noticed in my account of the Sea Dayaks : nor must I omit to mention that their intercourse with a succession of able European officers, and the constant presence among them of Mr. Gomez, a missionary of singular tact, have had a remarkable effect upon their characters, and rendered them a very superior tribe. They kill the cobra and other reptiles, but the Land Dayaks of Lundu, as well as the Silakaus, consider it wrong to destroy it. They say that in former times one of their female ancestors was pregnant for seven years, and ultimately brought forth twins, one a human being and the other a cobra de capella. They lived together for some time, the snake always keeping his head well out of the way for fear of hurting his brother with his venomous teeth, but allowing him to amuse himself with his tail. When they grew up the cobra left the house to dwell in the forest, but before leaving he told his mother to warn her children, that should, unfortunately, one of them be bitten by the hooded snake, not to run away, but remain a whole day at the spot where the injury was received, and the venom would have no poisonous effect. Not long after he was met in the forest by his brother, who, under the effect of surprise, drew his sword and smote off his tail, which accounts for that blunted appearance observable in all his brethren. The superstition of the snake curing the bite is believed ; the wounded person being still often allowed to remain twenty-four hours in the jungle. During my fourteen years' residence in Borneo, I have only heard of two persons dying from the effects of snake bites.



*Names :—*

Names of Men.		Names of Women.	
Mobon.	Si Ngaruk.	Si Kudon.	Tika.
Doden.	Si Gindai.	Si Risi.	Si Nyat.
Magè.	Si Raru.	Si Tuk.	Monog.
Nyait.	Si Rugi.	Si Ngada.	Sakot.
Rinyang.	Si Kangon.	Si Risok.	Si Rawang.
Si Ngais.	Sonyam.	Si Kùdi.	Sopop.
Marik.	Si Mara.	Si Bior.	Si Nuag.
Si Neg.	Sanyung.	Sanut.	

The above are personal names ; when young the parents often change them, especially if the child be sickly, there being an idea that they will deceive the inimical spirits by following this practice. As the children grow up they are dignified further by a change of name : thus, “ Si Mara ” becomes “ Ma Kari,” *i. e.* the father of Kari, being the name of a child of his father’s or mother’s younger brother or sister. If this younger brother or sister have no children, whose names are to spare, “ Si Mara ” must wait until he gets a child of his own, and then he takes his child’s name with “ Ma ” prefixed. The same custom holds good with women ;—“ Si Risi,” a personal name, being changed into “ Nu Sangut,” *i. e.* the mother of Sangut. So, again, if the younger brother or sister (and this is a most comprehensive relationship) of a person’s father or mother have grandchildren, then the “ Ma ” and “ Nu ” are abandoned for “ Bai ” and “ Muk,” the grandfather or grandmother : thus, “ Ma Kari ” might become “ Bai Kinyum,” and “ Nu Sangut ” be metamorphosed into “ Muk Weit.”

*Unlawful Marriages.*—The prohibited degrees seem

to be the same as adopted among ourselves: marriage with a deceased wife's sister, it is said, is prohibited, as well as that between first cousins; and second cousins are only permitted after the exchange of a fine of a jar, the woman paying it to the relation of her lover, and he to her relations.

*Heights.*—**MALE ADULTS:** 4 ft. 10 in. (short); 5 ft. 1 in.; 5 ft. 3 in.; 5 ft. 4 in.; 5 ft. 5½ in.; 5 ft. 7 in. (very tall). **FEMALE ADULTS:** 4 ft. 6 in. (short); 4 ft. 8 in.; 4 ft. 9 in.; 4 ft. 10½ in.; 5 ft.; 5 ft. 2 in. (tall).

They have little or no knowledge of medicine, though they sometimes collect pepper and onions with which to make physic, a kind of stomachic. The grated flesh of old cocoa-nut is occasionally applied to wounds and bruises, but there is no general knowledge even of the powers of rice poultices. Blue-stone they eagerly inquire for, and they have learnt its properties. Their most common physic is to get a friend to chew up a mass of sirih-leaves, areca and lime, until it is reduced to a thick red juice, which is then squirted from the mouth over the part affected. If this medicine be thus administered by a regular doctor it will be more efficacious, but any one may do it. This mess is used indiscriminately for all diseases: stomach ache, sore eyes, ulcers, wounds, boils, rheumatism, as well as fever. When it is squirted on to the forehead it is supposed to be efficacious in relieving the accompanying headache. This is very much practised by the Malays, who thus render their sick objects of disgust.

I have already spoken of a mixture of blood and turmeric being plastered on the head at the regular

ceremonies. On these occasions also the cheek and forehead of those who take part in them are marked with blood. I have also spoken of bathing the patient in cocoa-nut water, and these comprise all the medical applications of which I am aware.

In most tribes, there are five or six priests, and in some districts half the female population are included under the denomination of priestesses.

In Western Sarawak they are not so numerous. The power of these women consists chiefly in their chanting, which is supposed to be most effectual in driving away spirits. Strange to say, some of the sentences they chant are not in their own language, but in Malay. These women are not necessarily impostors, they but practise the ways and recite the songs which they received from their predecessors, and the dignity and importance of the office enable them to enjoy some intervals of pleasurable excitement during their laborious lives. Their dress is very gay; over their heads they throw a red cloth, on the top of which they place a cylindrical cap, worked in red, white, and black beads, and their short petticoats are fringed with hundreds of small, tinkling hawk-bells. Around their neck is hung a heavy necklace, consisting of five or six strings of black, red, and white opaque beads, and in addition they hang over their shoulders, belt-fashion, a band of teeth, large hawk-bells and opaque beads. There are several stories concerning the origin of the priestesses. That which is current in the Quop district is as follows:—

Long ago, when the Dayaks were quite ignorant of religion, a certain man and his wife had two daughters.

Both of them fell ill ; the parents knew of no remedy, so they took a pig's trough, placed the children within it, and sent them floating down the river towards the sea. The great "Iang," from his lofty seat, saw them in this pitiful situation and crying helplessly, he had compassion on them and took them to his dwelling on the mountain of Santubong. There he cured them himself, and then taught them the mysteries of religion, the formulas they were to chant, the taboo they were to observe, and the rites and ceremonies they were to perform. This done, he transported them back to their own village, where they were welcomed and revered, and it was they who founded the sacred order of priestesses, as it now exists throughout these countries.

The priests must in many respects be regarded as impostors, though, of course, even with their deceitful practices is mixed much superstitious credulity. They pretend to meet and to converse with spirits, to receive warnings, and sometimes presents from them, to have the power of seeing and capturing the departing soul of a sick man, and to be able to find and secure for the Dayaks that vital principle of the rice which "Tapa" sends down from above at their two chief harvest feasts. To increase their authority, they do not hesitate to declare that they have predicted every event. No accident happens to man or goods of which they do not say that they had previous warning ; and a sick man scarcely ever calls upon them for their aid when they do not tell him that for some time previously they had known he was going to have an attack. One of their commonest practices is to pretend to extract

from a sick man's body stones and splinters, which they declare are spirits. They wave charms over the part affected, and jingle them upon it for a moment, then bring them to the floor with a crash, and out of them falls a stone, or piece of wood, or small roll of rag. At least half a dozen of these evil spirits are occasionally brought out of a man's stomach, one after the other, and great is the influence, and not small the profit, of a successful priest. For getting back a man's soul he receives six gallons of uncleaned rice; for extracting a spirit from a man's body, the same fee; and for getting the soul of the rice at harvest feasts he receives three cups from every family in whose apartments he obtains it. The value of six gallons of uncleaned rice is not very great, but it is the sixtieth part of the amount obtained by an able-bodied man for his annual farm labour.

The priestesses have their fees, but they do not make so much from the superstition of their countrymen as the male professors.

*Manufactures.*—Among these are baskets of fine rattan and coarse rattan mats. In each village there is generally a blacksmith who can make as well as repair their spears and choppers. Each man, moreover, is his own carpenter, gardener, and farmer; in fact, does almost everything necessary for the welfare of his family. Their cloths are generally manufacture by the Sea Dayaks of Seribas and Sakarang.

*Agriculture.*—They plant rice, Indian corn, cucumbers, bananas, sweet potatoes, sugar-cane, kiladis, yams, beans, and all kinds of fruit-trees around their villages and on neighbouring hills.

I will add a story which was kindly communicated to me by Mr. Chalmers as to the introduction of rice among the Dayak tribes.

Once upon a time, when mankind had nothing to eat but fruit and a species of edible fungus that grows upon rotten trees, and there were no cereals to gladden and strengthen man's heart, a party of Dayaks, among whom was a man named Si Jura, whose descendants live to this day in the Dayak village of Simpok, went forth to sea. They sailed on for some time, until they came to a place at which they heard the distant roar of a large whirlpool, and, to their amazement, saw before them a huge fruit-tree rooted in the sky, and thence hanging down with its branches touching the waves. At the request of his companions, Si Jura climbed among its boughs to collect the fruit which was in abundance, and when he was there he found himself tempted to ascend the trunk and find out how the tree grew in that position. He did so, and at length got so high that his companions in the boat lost sight of him, and after waiting a certain time coolly sailed away loaded with fruit. Looking down from his lofty position, Si Jura saw his friends making off, so he had no other resource but to go on climbing in hopes of reaching some resting-place. He therefore persevered climbing higher and higher, till he reached the roots of the tree, and there he found himself in a new country—that of the Pleiades. There he met a being in form of a man, named Si Kira, who took him to his house and hospitably entertained him. The food offered was a mess of soft white grains—boiled rice. “Eat,” said Si Kira. “What!” those little

maggots?" replied Si Jura. "They are not maggots, but boiled rice;" and Si Kira forthwith explained the process of planting, weeding, and reaping, and of pounding and boiling rice. Before eating, Si Kira's wife went to get some water, and during her absence Si Jura looked into a large jar near where he was sitting, and there, as in a telescope, he saw his father's house, and his parents and brothers and sisters all assembled and talking. His spirits were much depressed at the remembrance of a home he perhaps might not see again, and instead of eating he began to weep. Si Kira, who perceived at once what was the matter, bade him cheer up and eat away, for he would arrange everything for him satisfactorily. So Si Jura made a hearty meal, and after eating Si Kira gave him seed of three kinds of rice, instructed him how to cut down the forest, burn, plant, weed, and reap, take omens from birds, and celebrate harvest feasts, and then, by a long rope, let him down to earth again near his father's house.

Si Jura it was who taught the Dayaks to farm, and to this day they follow the instruction he received from Si Kira. Nay, more, the Pleiades themselves tell them when to farm; and according to their position in the heavens, morning and evening, do they cut down the forest, burn, plant, and reap. The Malays are obliged to follow their example, or their lunar year would soon render their farming operations unprofitable.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE SAMARAHAN RIVER AND THE CAVES OF SIRIH.

STARTED in the evening from our house at Kuching amid a storm of rain, thunder, and lightning. Our well-covered boat protected us, though the rain fell in torrents and dashed impetuously against the matted roof, creating so great a noise as to prevent our voices being heard even when shouting. At last the gusts of wind sweeping up the reaches became so violent, that we were forced to draw under the shelter of the banks, and await the abating of the storm. I never saw lightning more vivid, or heard the crash and rattle of the thunder more deafening. The storm was evidently increasing: one bright, blinding flash, and one ear-splitting peal, that made my heart stand still, marked the crisis, gradually the lightning became less bright and the thunder less loud, as the high wind carried the tempest before it. In about an hour we were enabled to proceed.

Our destination was the neighbouring river of Samarahan, which can be reached either through inland passages, or by sea passing out by the Muaratabas entrance of the Sarawak.



As the night was very dark, and the ebb tide nearly run out, we avoided passing into the Samarahan by the Rhium passage, as the rocks there are dangerous at low water, but chose another inland waterway, very narrow, and, if possible, to be avoided, as the name alone is a warning—"the musquito passage." It is famous for the size and venom of that insect,—in fact I know of but one other spot worse, and that is Paknam at the entrance of the Siam river. The men, however, repented their choice, as it took us the whole night to get through, and no one was able to close his eyes. The leaves of the nipa palm nearly met over our heads, and every time a stem was touched a swarm of musquitoes settled on us. I endeavoured to shelter myself under a blanket, but the heat was so great as to compel me unwillingly to face the enemy. I have heard of men, exposed to this annoyance for several days, being thrown into a fever by constant irritation, and I can well believe it.

At daylight we reached the Samarahan, which is the first river east of the Sarawak, and entered it at a spot about twelve miles from the sea. The banks of this river are low, and consist entirely of rich alluvial deposits. When cleared, they form the best ground for rice, and when drained the sugar-cane flourishes with extraordinary luxuriance. It is, therefore, a very favourite farming ground for all those strangers who have sought refuge in Sarawak. There are several thousands scattered along its banks, besides the native population of the river.

The Samarahan Malays are a quiet, inoffensive people, and live almost entirely by farming and

gardening; there is also a large Dayak population in the interior. On the left-hand branch are the Bukar tribe, divided into four villages—Munggu Babi, or the hill of pigs, Jenang, Lanchang, and Kumpang—which contain about three hundred families that pay revenue. On the right-hand branch are the two tribes of Sring and San Pok, each containing about eighty families. I say “pay revenue,” as it is seldom that seventy-five per cent. do so. The custom is to pay by the “door,” that is, each division in their village houses pays the Government, rice to the value of from three to four shillings. To avoid this, two or three families will crowd into a space barely sufficient for one, however, measures have since been taken to ensure a proper enumeration.

Pulled up the river towards the village where Stia Bakti, the principal Malay officer, lived, and we passed on our way the houses of a branch of the Sibuyau tribe of Dayaks. At the landing-place we were met by a crowd of Malays, looking especially miserable, thus showing, that like good Mohamedans, they were strictly keeping the fast, while a crowd in the neighbouring mosque were chanting in a loud voice verses from the Koran.

The old chief, a pleasant, fine-looking man, came down to our boat, and our follower, Kasim, explained to him the object of Captain Brooke's tour of inspection, which was to inquire into the charges brought against certain Malays of oppressing the Dayaks. He said he was extremely pleased, as it would then prove how well he and his people had conducted themselves. He offered to accompany us, but this was politely

declined on account of the fast, but the real reason was that the Dayaks would not have entered into their complaints before their local ruler. As the flood-tide had just ended, and there was a six hours' ebb before us, we fell down the river to the Sibuyau village to pass away the time, and give the men an opportunity to cook and sleep. We were received with much hospitality by the Dayak chief. The hamlet consists of two long houses, surrounded by a rough palisade, called by them a fort.

The Samarahan was a favourite attacking ground of the pirates, and owed much of its safety to the courage of these Dayaks, who were formerly more united than they are now. The Sibuyau are, in fact, strangers in this river. They were harassed out of their own country by the Seribas pirates and retired to Samarahan; and, as I have before observed, they are now scattered, a section here, a larger one on the Lundu river, another at Meradang on the Quop, besides smaller villages on the Sarawak, the Sadong, and in other districts.

Their houses were like the others belonging to the Sea Dayaks; the chief's own division was large, with mosquito curtains, and had an air of comfort and tidiness very unusual among them. These Sibuyaues are more independent than the Land Dayaks, and keener traders. One of the chief's married daughters was quite pretty, extremely fair, with soft expressive features, and a very gentle voice; she was making an elegant mat of the finest rushes; other women were employed in forming coarser ones from the rougher leaves, while those that were not so engaged were

turning the padi into rice by beating it in their mortars, and winnowing it. They show a skill in the latter process truly marvellous: they put the beaten padi into a flat basket with slightly rounded raised edges, and standing on the platform to catch the slight breeze, quietly throw the contents in the air, and catch the grains while the wind carries away the chaff; it is quickly cleaned. There was an appearance of activity and bustle about this village that was really pleasing.

On the beams above our heads were some roughly carved dragons' heads ornamented with China paper, which some wise Dayak had informed them must be guarded and preserved with care. They were quite modern, and most probably a knave had worked on these simple people to purchase them of him, as they could not tell their use except to stick up during their feasts, in the same way as the other Sea Dayaks do with their rudely-carved figures of birds. In front of their village was erected one of their climbing-poles, at the raising of which the chief proudly declared one hundred and fifty jars of tuak—a spirit made from rice—were consumed; and he added, with an appearance of the greatest satisfaction, that his tribe and all their visitors were intoxicated for six days. At their convivial meetings some strong-headed fellow will sit down before a jar, holding, perhaps, a dozen gallons, and help those around; for every one he serves out he should drink one himself, and it is his pride if he can manage to keep his seat until all have lost their senses around him. To take glass for glass with each man until the jar was emptied being a manifest impossi-

bility, there must be some sleight of hand practised to deceive the others. On inquiring whether they never felt headaches the next day, they said no ; but their Lingga visitors at the last great feast had cried from the pains they suffered ; it was ludicrous to notice the boastful look with which they said, “ The Sibuyaues get no headaches.”

The chief furnished us with fresh tuak, which had rather a sickly, unpleasant taste, excellent omelettes, and slices of fried kiladi, a species of arum ; in return we presented him with Batavian arrack, tobacco, and sugar. I have said that these Sibuyaues are not so easily oppressed as the other Dayaks ; in fact, when the chief was a young man, the most powerful Malay ruler on the coast, Abdulraman, the governor of Siriki, on the Rejang, entered their village, and tried to force them to purchase his goods at exorbitant prices. They refused, upon which he directed his followers to seize some baskets of rice, but to his astonishment the Dayaks resisted, drove him and his party to their prahus, and in the struggle killed several of his followers. The remembrance of this and other similar deeds has given them confidence and preserved them from oppression.

On the flood tide making, we took leave of our hospitable friends and pulled up the river. Both banks were covered with gardens filled with fruit and vegetables, as well as with remarkably fine sugar-cane, which was grown, not to be manufactured into sugar, but to be eaten in its natural state. We stopped for the night at a Malay house, and our men cooked and slept on shore.

Before daylight, we were again on the move. The appearance of the country continues the same, but the houses, as we proceeded farther up, were not quite so numerous; none of the gardens extended above a few hundred yards from the river, and we could observe the dark line of the forest even from our boat. We nowhere found the water shallow till we turned up the left-hand branch that leads to the Bukar tribe; here it becomes very narrow and is obstructed by trees and branches, and occasionally little pebbly rapids. It was often almost impassable from the old trunks of fallen trees that stretched from bank to bank; but by the greatest patience and perseverance, and by removing the covering of our boat, we passed over some and under others of these obstructions: at last all these difficulties being surmounted, we reached the landing-place of the Munggu Babi Bukars about half-past two, after upwards of eight hours' hard work.

It was pleasant to leave the perpetual mud flat of the Samarahan and get into this branch, where occasionally rocks, and banks overshadowed by the enormous trees of the old forest, with glimpses of hills and distant mountains, varied the scene. The Samarahan, though not a very picturesque river, would afford great satisfaction to any one who contemplated sugar plantations. The soil is of the richest description, and, from the existing cultivation, we may infer what it would become in the hands of able Chinese agriculturists. These Malays neither use the spade, the hoe, nor the plough, but simply stir the soil with a pointed stick, or with their iron choppers.

At the landing-place we met a party of Sadong and Bukar Dayaks, who shouldered our baggage, and we then started on our way to Munggu Babi. The path at first was detestable—the worst of paths, over slippery trunks and branches of huge trees lying scattered over the sites of their old rice farms, very perilous, as the slightest slip endangered the safety of a limb. To the bare-footed Dayak it is nothing, but shoes render it unpleasant; however, it soon changed into the ordinary style, and getting rapidly over about four miles, we arrived at the foot of the hill on which the houses are built. They were entirely hidden by fruit-trees. Beyond rose the mountains of Sadong, which can be seen from the decks of the ships that pass along the coast. At the foot of Munggu Babi flowed a delightful stream into which we plunged to dispel some little fatigue arising from the heat. Our Dayak attendants had pushed on with our baggage, and being now refreshed we began climbing the steep that separated us from the houses; no sooner was this observed, than every available brass wall-piece was fired in our honour, and it was under this salute that we entered the village.

It is an illustration of the state of insecurity in which these people formerly lived, and which is still vivid in their imagination, that when those who were returning from their farms heard the guns fired, they hid themselves in the forest, thinking their homes were surrounded by enemies, and it was not until the gongs beat out joyful sounds that they were reassured and returned to their abodes.

The village is, as I have said, situated on the

summit of a little hill covered with every kind of fruit-tree, and was, the Bukars say, named Munggu Babi, or hill of pigs, from the innumerable wild swine that used to swarm upon it, very well represented at the present day by their civilized brethren. The first habitation is the Pangga or head-house, lately erected, very comfortable, in which we took up our lodgings; a rough sort of street beyond it, lined with very old-looking houses, rising one above the other with the slope of the hill, with two more head-houses at the farther end, completed the village.

We appeared to be very welcome guests, and were soon surrounded by the elders of the tribe and by crowds of young men. We were the second party of white visitors who had slept at this place, but the first probably who travelled in European style, and, as usual, our proceedings excited much curiosity. Just as dinner was over, we heard the pleasing announcement that a Malay, who lived among the Dayaks, had shot a fine buck, which he very obligingly presented to us. No one who has not lived principally on ducks and fowls for many years can appreciate the importance of such an event. We agreed to visit the famous caves of Sirih the next day, and in the evening to have a search for deer. They were represented as very numerous, as the Bukars do not eat their flesh,—a fortunate event for their visitors, but not for themselves, as they are thus deprived of good and easily-acquired food.

Up early, and after a hearty breakfast of deer-steaks, started for the caves of Sirih. We passed up the street that runs through the centre of the village,



the houses looking very dilapidated in comparison with those of the Sibuyau Dayaks, but all were swarming with children. An abrupt descent brought us to a lower part of the stream that runs at the foot of Munggu Babi, affording beautifully clear water for the villagers. Continuing our course over the low buttress of the Sadong mountains, where the Dayaks have enclosed several spots for gardens, we had a beautiful prospect of the surrounding country, better seen, however, from the heights above, which we intended passing over the next day. Two miles' walk through old farms and fresh felled jungle brought us to the foot of a very steep hill in which the cave was situated. Clambering up the rocks for a couple of hundred feet, we suddenly found ourselves at the mouth of the cave. The entrance is peculiar: divided formerly into three, the fall of a pillar has united two of the openings into one, which is above thirty feet in breadth; at first there appeared no far interior, but to the left a dark descending passage led into the great cave. To the right was a separate apartment with a fine opening, forming the first division of the mouth, but inaccessible from the outside. The Dayak boys beckoned us to come in. We went, thinking they wished us to look out from thence on the beautiful valley below and the lofty mountain beyond it, but our surprise was great when they pointed into a deep hole where lay the skeleton of a human being.

Among the guides who were with us was a resolute but very good-tempered looking Sarawak man, and as he was standing near we asked him the cause of those bones being there. He answered very quietly, "It is

only a Dayak that I shot many years ago." We asked him to explain, which he did without any hesitation. Some years before these districts came under Sir James Brooke's influence a chief named Bandhar Kasim ruled over the Sadong province, which lies to the east of the Samarahan ; he was a very harsh man, and oppressed the Dayak more than was usually the case among the neighbouring chiefs. One tribe on the right-hand branch of the Sadong had suffered very severely from his exactions. They only murmured when he took their goods : when he demanded their children they refused to give them up, and flying to the Sirih caves threw up a barricade across the entrance. This example he thought might prove contagious among the neighbouring tribes, so he determined to attack them ; besides he was delighted with the opportunity of acquiring slaves, as every one he captured would be reduced to that state. By promising to divide the booty and the captives he soon collected a force of three hundred men, many with firearms. These marched boldly to the attack, but being received with a shower of heavy stones and rolling rocks, quickly withdrew to an open space, a little grass spot which the narrator pointed out to us.

There being none present who appeared willing to expose his life for the sake of the Malay chief, the whole affair seemed likely to terminate in a distant but harmless fire being kept up at the entrance of the cave. At last he cried out, "I will give a slave to any man who will drive those devils from their position." The Sarawak man instantly volunteered, if the others would support him. Plunging into the jungle,

he reached the foot of the hill, and by dint of strength and activity, contrived to climb the almost perpendicular side of the mountain, and reach a spot above the cave, from whence he came down until he could look well over the barricade. The descent was now very dangerous, but he prepared for it. The first Dayak who showed himself he shot through the body; then throwing away his gun and taking advantage of the confusion caused by the fall of their companion, he boldly swung himself down the rocks, and sprang in among the astonished Dayaks, crying, "Who is brave enough to fight me?" The unfortunate wretches, thinking he must be well backed, fled into the cave and were soon pursued by the Malays: two were killed and seven taken prisoners, the rest escaped, as the cave extends quite through the mountain.

While we were listening to this story, the Dayaks had prepared dry sticks of a resinous wood by splitting one end until it had the appearance of a brush; they were tolerable substitutes for torches. We followed our guides down the narrow passage that leads into the interior cave. They walked with the greatest care, examining the ground before they placed a foot ahead, knowing that the men who now collect the edible birds' nests here, often place sharp-pointed pieces of bamboo sticking up in the path to punish unwary interlopers. The cave gradually became broader and more lofty, and our slight torches could scarcely pierce the gloom that hung thickly around us.

As we advanced the form of the cave varied but slightly, until we reached a spot where we had to pass through a sort of opening, like some of those diminu-

tive doors occasionally seen in odd nooks of old cathedrals. Here we found ourselves in a small chamber that appeared for a moment the termination of our walk, but in the right corner was a narrow descending interstice in the rock, through which we could just squeeze our bodies to find ourselves again in the lofty cave. The gentle fall of water told of the neighbourhood of a stream, which now and then became our path. The Dayaks say that there are fish that see not, in the dark pool, which may at times be observed, particularly under the rocks.

We soon arrived at a sloping surface over which the water spread, rendering it difficult to prevent our feet gliding from under us. This I gladly climbed, as we had been informed that during a heavy shower of rain the water would suddenly rise to such a height in the depressed portion of the cave we had just passed, that all non-swimmers would be drowned. The walking now became often unpleasant, slippery mud and no less slippery rock ; the ascents and descents were very abrupt, and occasionally we passed a deep chasm where a slip might be fatal.

The stream that runs through the cave now and then disappears under some rock to reappear fifty yards ahead.

After continuing our course about a quarter of a mile, we came on a spot where the height of the cave from seventy feet decreased to three, and through this aperture the wind blew sharply and felt very cold. The Dayaks now proposed we should stop, as our torches would not last longer than the time required to return to the entrance ; but we said we wished to

advance as far as the chamber in which the edible birds' nests were collected ; so putting out some of the torches we pushed on in a stooping position. One fresher blast blew out some of the lights, and I thought for a moment that we were about to be left in the dark. A hundred yards brought us to the spot where the Dayaks take up their abode during the gathering season : it was a more lofty chamber than any we had as yet passed through. The birds build as near as possible to the top of the cave, and the dangerous operation of collecting the nests is performed by Dayaks who climb long poles fastened together to the height of eighty or ninety feet, which looked very poor scaffolding to sustain men at that dizzy height. The gathering is slow work, taking them five days. The nests found in these caves are very inferior to those of Baram ; the former being like dirty glue, the latter like the finest isinglass.

We should like to have penetrated farther and seen the country on the opposite side, but the cave was reputed dangerous and but seldom frequented, as the Dayaks rarely go beyond the profitable chamber. This would have rendered our progress slow, and the blasts of cold wind might have blown out our torches, now nearly consumed ; and if the chasms were as bad even as those we had passed over, we could scarcely have finished our journey in safety. Reluctantly, we gave the order to return, when the whole body of little Dayak boys who had accompanied us, half frightened of ghosts and half in fun, started away yelling and whooping, their torches occasionally throwing light on the rocky sides and now fading away to mere specks

of light. The loftiness of this cave, its great extent, the cry of the disturbed swallows, the peculiarly grave look of our almost naked guides, the knowledge that we were the first Europeans who had ever penetrated to this spot, the distant shouts of the boys as they were re-echoed back—all combined to render the scene interesting and impressive.

From every calculation we could make, we were convinced that we penetrated the cave above a third of a mile. It is the finest I have ever seen, but I afterwards heard that there is another called Gua Mawap, or the cloudy cave, which is infinitely larger. It is said that some Malays who had entered it to look for birds' nests lost their way and were no more heard of. The Dayaks from this, or some superstitious reason, did not mention its existence to us, as they are very well aware that Englishmen have a propensity to search every spot, whether dangerous or not.

We returned under a very hot sun to find that all the villagers were in active preparation to have a dance and a feast. We agreed after dinner to go to the chief's house, and submit ourselves to their will. They sent us a large decanter—where they got it from I forgot to inquire—full of a very sweet and pleasant liquor, of the colour of dark sherry, made from the tampui fruit: it was stronger than it tasted. While we were waiting for our dinner, we observed two very pleasant-looking girls of sixteen come cautiously up the ladder of the head-house. As it was very unusual for women to enter this bachelor's hall, we quietly watched, while pretending to be engaged in our toilette. Glancing at us, and thinking

themselves unobserved, they made their way over to two Dayak youths who had accompanied us from the Sibuyau village. The fair Hebes bore in their hands two large bowls of fresh tuak, which they pressed their visitors to drink, but they laughed and declined. The young girls opened a regular battery of blandishments, put their arms round them and besought them to drink, not to give them the shame of having to take the liquor back to their houses to be laughed at by all the other girls; they wound up by saying, "What! are the Sibuyaues so weak-headed as to fear to drink Bukar tuak?" This was the *coup de grace*; the youths, already half overcome, raised the bowls to their lips, and were not allowed to set them down till they had drained the last drop. The girls then ran away laughing, knowing the effect that must soon follow the draught.

The Dayak women seldom, if ever, drink, but some of them appear delighted to see their husbands and brothers in a wretched state of intoxication. Mr. Crookshank told me that he arrived at a Sadong village during one of their drinking feasts: the men were already staggering in their walk, and towards evening were sitting and lying about too drunk to be able to raise the bowls to their lips, when the women took that office upon them and poured the liquor down the drunkards' throats. It must not be supposed, however, that the Dayaks are habitual drinkers; on the contrary, except at their feasts, they are a very sober people.

In the evening we went to the chief's house, and had to go through most of the ceremonies I have

already described in the account of our visit up the left-hand branch of the Sarawak river. During the dancing of the old people, we inquired whether the young women never danced, and on our promising a gift of a brass chain that the girls wear round the waist to all who would join the elders, there was no lack of competitors. It was mischievously suggested to the chief's daughter that I was a famous dancer, and it was amusing to notice the eagerness with which the girls besought me to join them; as four drew me gently into the vortex it was impossible to resist, though I quickly disengaged myself by assuring them that on their split bamboo floors no European could dance.

The most remarkable peculiarity of many of these men is their being so hairy in comparison to those of other tribes, some having regular whiskers, and others beards. The women have their limbs spoilt from carrying heavy weights, even from their tenderest age, over exceedingly steep ground; their legs appeared bent. I saw one mother bearing on her back two children, and a basket containing twenty or more bamboos full of water, the latter a sufficient load for one person. In the harvest, they act as beasts of burden, and bring the bulk of the rice home. The children, in general, were very clean and pleasing.

We started early in the morning for Lanchang, the second division of the Bukar tribe that we intended to visit. The path was over the Sadong mountains, where a depression in the range renders its elevation not perhaps over a thousand feet. As we moved along the open ground among the fenced-in gardens,



we were enabled to obtain a very extensive view of the surrounding country, and I have rarely seen one of greater beauty; the variety of form assumed by the hills from the mountain range to the isolated peak rising from the fertile plains of the Samarahan and Quop, the extent of ground over which the eye could travel from the Santubong and the sea to the interior hills of Sadong, rendered it almost as lovely and as interesting as the famous scene from the summit of the Penang Hill, in the Straits of Malacca. It wanted but the civilized appearance which is found there—the houses, villas, churches, ships, and roads. The way over the hill was difficult, consisting entirely of small felled trees, notched, and in a very rotten state, and sometimes both steep and slippery. However, we got over it without a fall, and managed to work our way to the opposite side, whence the valley of the Bukar stream and the interior of the Sadong are visible—pretty enough, but all scenery here has similar characteristics.

The sun was very warm, and the perspiration ran from me in streams, but meeting with a cool rivulet, shaded by overhanging rocks, not by trees, we sat still till perfectly cooled, and then refreshed ourselves by a bathe under a tiny but foaming cascade. The two Sibuyau youths who had been so fascinated by the fair maidens the previous night looked very woful this morning, and could hardly get along at all or carry their own baggage, but sat moodily looking at the water, with their heads pressed lightly between their hands.

From this spot our path continued among the

valleys, over rice plantations, without any remarkable feature. At length we reached the valley of Lanchang, on the borders of a pebbly stream. It is built on the low land, and has a greater appearance of comfort than Munggu Babi. As we were their first European visitors, we excited a great deal of curiosity, but forcing our way through the crowd, we took up our quarters in the head-house, making our beds, as usual, beneath a ghastly row of skulls.

We were welcomed by the old chief Sunan in the absence of his rivals. In this village five men claimed the supremacy, having been appointed at different times by various people. Sunan had been promoted some thirty or forty years before by the Sultan of Brunei, but was now too old to do his work effectually: the other four chiefs were irregularly named by certain native officers without authority. As I have elsewhere observed, under the former system, the Malay chiefs received half the revenues of the Dayak tribes instead of salary, which opened the door to many abuses. The great evil-doer was the Datu Patinggi of Sarawak, who had charge of Lanchang. When he found that a chief would not sufficiently second him in his endeavour to monopolize the trade, he would appoint another. All this was quite illegal; it was to do away with these abuses, and to inaugurate a new system, that Sir James Brooke had directed Mr. Brooke to make these tours of inspection through all the principal districts of Sarawak and its dependencies.

The consequence of having five chiefs in this village was of necessity a series of disputes, and the day before our arrival two of them had quarrelled violently,

and one proposed that, to 'settle the matter, they should sally out into the neighbouring countries, and the first who should bring home a head should be declared victor, and have the case decided in his favour. It was their ancient custom, not that they dared to carry it into practice.

Mr. Brooke summoned the five chiefs before him, and ordered them to appear at the capital, when it would be settled who should be appointed by the Government; in the meantime he set our followers to make inquiries among the principal families, which of the competitors was considered fittest for the office and was most popular among the tribe.

Presently a small crowd of litigants assembled, and asked to have their cases settled; but finding that none of them were of less than twenty years' standing, they were told that it would be impossible to finish them so quickly, and they were put off. None of them really expected to have their disputes arranged, but they appeared delighted to have a grievance to relate. I had never seen any Land Dayaks with an air of greater comfort; they appeared to be well fed, and, consequently, were more free from skin diseases than their neighbours.

In the evening, we went out to look for deer. After making a circuit of a few miles, I reached a stream near which the animals are usually found, when, to my surprise, I heard a shot fired, followed immediately by another. I ran forward only in time to see a fine buck spring into the forest and another stretched lifeless at Mr. Brooke's feet. He came to the spot, saw two grazing together, and with an old-fashioned

cavalry carbine knocked over one; the other stood astonished, which gave him time to reload and hit him heavily. We tracked him for a little distance, but the night closing in prevented our finding him. Our follower, Kasim, saw eight, wounded one, but did not succeed in securing him. My indignation at the mistake of my guide in bringing me to a spot already engaged was much mitigated by the prospect of deer-steaks for dinner.

That night there were the usual ceremonies and dances without an incident to vary them: they kept us up rather late.

Walked over to Jenang: it was but three miles off, through gardens, groves of fruit-trees, old rice-grounds, and underwood. We noticed with much indignation that hundreds of fine fruit-trees were destroyed, and on inquiry found it had been done by old Sunan, who wanted to have a farm near his own house. The trees belonged to the tribe, who vainly tried to persuade him not to do it; but being backed by the Malay chief, he would not listen to them. The village of Jenang is small and of little consequence, numbering but twenty-five families, and had not arrived at the dignity of a chief. The head-house was very old and small, and the worst we had seen.

All the elders were called together in the morning to choose a leader; and instead of fixing on one of themselves, their choice fell on a young man of rather heavy appearance, who seemed, however, to be an universal favourite. After this ceremony, we started off on our return to Munggu Babi, through the valleys and lowlands between the hills. The walk was long,

and very much exposed to the 'sun, but we reached that village by one, and after a short rest pushed on to our boat.

As we had heavy rain the previous night, the stream was much swollen, but it helped us over many obstructions, though it rendered some few more difficult. We brought up for the night a short distance from the junction.

Started up the right branch of the Samarahan to meet the San Poks, who were a primitive tribe, never yet visited by Europeans. We were detained several hours by the numerous obstructions in the river, and at one place, a huge tree had fallen across, rendering a passage impossible, except by dragging the boat over. We tried, but an ominous crack made us quickly push her back into the stream. We then with axes removed a portion of the trunk, and at last got safely over. We met a party of San Poks coming down the river, who returned with us. We did not reach their landing-place till three P.M. A very dirty walk of two miles brought us to their village-house, which was new, the tribe having but lately removed hither. The country we passed over was undulating, occasionally descending in abrupt ravines. The San Poks had chosen a low, cleared hill for their domicile. We were welcomed by a perfect storm of good wishes, seized on by a dozen women, who insisted on washing our feet, tying little bells round our wrists, and dancing before us enthusiastically. Very few could understand Malay. We inquired about the deer-grounds, but as these Dayaks are partial to venison, there was no game to be found in the neighbourhood.

The San Poks appeared mad with excitement ; they danced, and drank, and beat their gongs and drums till daylight, affording us but snatches of slumber. Their ceremonies were exactly similar to those I have formerly described.

Turned our faces towards home. When we came to the Bukar branch, we entered a small Dayak canoe and paddled a short distance up to land near a spot where a hot spring was said to exist. We went ashore, and wandered on for about a mile, our guides evidently not quite certain of the path. At length we reached a small stream flowing through a flat tract of jungle—the soil a dark mud ; tried it, and certainly it was very warm. Following its course, we came to the place where the water bubbled up from the ground through the black soil. The spring was about six feet by three where it issued from the earth, and supplied a shallow rill about a yard in breadth, and we could see the water bubbling up through liquid mud. I tried to keep my feet in it, but it was far too hot, and left a burning sensation. A vapour rose above it, but the water had no perceptible taste or smell.

A few planks of an old boat that we found at this spot have given rise to a story among the Dayaks, of an ancient ship being lost here when this lowland was covered by the sea. The planks evidently were part of a Sea Dayak boat, from the way they were cut, and were of a fine wood called marbau. They have been here for many years—perhaps the water has a preservative effect. The aborigines say that this spring is the work of evil spirits, and therefore will not approach it alone. We brought away a few bottles of

it. It appeared a curious place to find a warm-water spring, no high land near, indeed, no rocks, but all an alluvial flat.

Fell down the river till night. We sent our men ashore in one place to examine a stone that was, as usual, in some way connected with spirits. We had it removed to Sarawak. It proved to be the representation of the female principle so common near Hindu temples: its necessary companion was not found, or, being more portable, had been removed, though formerly it was observed there.

There is but one more known material remnant of Hindu worship in these countries: it is a stone bull—an exact facsimile of those found in India. It is cut from a species of stone said not to be found in Sarawak: the legs and a part of the head have been knocked off. Its history is this: many years ago, on being discovered in the jungle, the Malays and Dayaks removed it to the bank of the river, preparatory to its being conveyed to the town; but before it could be put into a prahu, they say, a tremendous storm of thunder and lightning, wind and rain, arose, which lasted thirty days. Fearing that the bull was angry at being disturbed in his forest home, they left him in the mud. When Sir James Brooke heard that this sacred bull was half-buried in the soil, he had it removed to his house. Several of the Dayak tribes sent deputations to him to express their fears of the evil consequences that would be sure to ensue—everything would go wrong, storms would arise, their crops be blighted, and famine would desolate the land. Humouring their prejudices, he answered, that they

were mistaken, that the bull, on the contrary, would be pleased to be removed from the dirty place in which the Malays had left him, and that now he was kept dry and comfortable, they would find he would show no anger. They were satisfied with this reply and departed. Occasionally, some of the Dayaks will come and wash both of these Hindu relics, and bear away the water to fertilize their fields.

Among some of the aborigines there is a superstition that they must not laugh at a dog or at a snake crossing their path. Should they do so, they would become stones. These Dayaks always refer with respect and awe to some rocks scattered over the summit of a hill in Sadong, saying that they were originally men. The place was a very likely one to be haunted—noble old forest, but seldom visited. They tell the following story: many years ago, a great chief gave a feast there, in the midst of which his lovely daughter came in, she was a spoilt child, who did nothing but annoy the guests. They at first tried to get rid of her by mixing dirt with her food, finding she still teased them for more, they gave her poison. Her father, in his anger, went back to his house, shaved his dog, and painted him with alternate streaks of black and white. Then giving him some intoxicating drink, he carried him in his arms into the midst of the assembly, and placed him on the ground. The dog began to caper about in the most ludicrous manner, which set all off laughing, the host as well as the guests, and they were immediately turned into stone.



## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE MOUNTAIN OF KINA BALU.

## FIRST EXPEDITION.

To ascend Kina Balu had been an ambition of mine, even before I ever saw Borneo, and to have been the first to do it would have increased the pleasure and the excitement. However, this satisfaction was not for me. Mr. Low, colonial treasurer of Labuan, had long meditated the same scheme, and in 1851 made the attempt. It was thought at the time but little likely to succeed, as the people and the country were entirely unknown, but by determined perseverance Mr. Low reached what may fairly be entitled the summit, though he did not attempt to climb any of the rugged peaks, rising a few hundred feet higher than the spot where he left a bottle with an inscription in it.

In 1856, Mr. Lobb, a naturalist, reached the foot of the mountain, but was not allowed by the natives to ascend.

In 1858, Mr. Low and I determined to make another attempt, and early in April I went over from Brunei to Labuan to join him. We waited till the





15th for a vessel, which we expected would bring us a supply of shoes, but as it did not arrive, we started. This was the cause of most of our mishaps, as a traveller can make no greater mistake than being careless of his feet, particularly in Borneo, where all long journeys must be performed on foot.

In 1851, Mr. Low had gone by the Tawaran, but the Bajus chief of the Tampasuk, who happened to be then in Labuan on a trading voyage, assuring us it would be easier to reach the mountain by his river, we determined to try that route. He started before us, and on April 15th we followed, in a pinnace, obligingly lent us by Dr. Coulthard of the Eastern Archipelago Company, our party being very large for the conveyance—Mr. Low and myself, two servants, six crew, and seventeen followers. We set sail along the north-west coast, and during the night passed Pulo Tiga, and were off the Papar in the morning.

We sailed along as beautiful a coast as can be conceived: ranges of hills rising one beyond the other, some grass-covered, others still clothed in forest, with soft valleys and lovely bays, and here and there patches of bright sandy beach, with Kina Balu towering in majestic grandeur as a background. In fact, the prospect increased in beauty until, on the evening of the 17th, we reached Abai, where we found the chief of Tampasuk in his prahu. The little bay at the entrance of the Abai affords shelter from all winds except the N.W.; the bar, however, having only a fathom at low water prevents any but small craft from entering the river. On the sandy point of the grassy plain, at the west side of the entrance, is a small well where boats

may water. The chief came off and agreed to go up the Abai with us, and send his own boat round by sea to the Tampasuk.

Started up the river at four A.M., but made very slow progress, the wind blowing down the stream, and the flood-tide not being strong. However, by towing and warping, we managed to reach our anchorage about ten P.M. The banks near the entrance appear to be high, but it was almost dark as we passed them, then narrow mangrove swamps fringed the shores with occasionally grassy hills in the background. On the left bank there are two small branches, Gading and Paka Paka, inhabited, the chief said, by Ida'an. There appear to be but few people living on this river, or rather salt-water creek. Three very small hamlets, containing altogether about thirty houses, were all I saw. Noticed numerous sheds for making salt, which appears to be the principal industry of the Bajus. The manufacture is conducted as follows:—great heaps of the roots of the nipa palm, which always grows in salt or brackish water, are collected and burnt; the residue is swept up and thrown into half-filled pans, where the ashes and small particles of wood rising to the surface are skimmed off, and the water boiled;—a coarse, bitter salt is the result. It is not disagreeable after a little use, and I much prefer it to the common article brought from Siam, and generally sold in these countries. The natives of the north seldom use the imported salt, except for preserving fish, whereas towards Sarawak, the Siamese is rapidly taking the place of that procured from the nipa palm.

This tree is indeed a blessing to the natives ; as we have seen, they make salt from the ashes of the root ; extract coarse sugar from the stem ; cover in their houses with the leaf ; from the last also they manufacture the mat called kejang, with which they form the walls of their houses, and the best awning in the world for boats, perfectly water-tight, and well adapted to keep out the rays of the sun. Their cigars are rolled up in the fine inner leaf, and a native could doubtless tell of a dozen other uses to which it is put. In ascending rivers there is nearly always deep water near the nipa, but shallow near the mangrove.

The Abai creek has more than two fathoms from the mouth to the hamlets. We anchored opposite a Lanun chief's house, which, though on the left bank, is still towards Tampasuk, as the river, after proceeding in a southerly direction, suddenly turns to the north-east.

Rajah Muda, the Lanun chief, came on board, and was very civil. He is a handsome-looking, manly fellow, and extremely polite. From what I have heard and seen, he may be regarded as a type of his countrymen—who differ altogether from the Baju : taller and slighter in figure, more regular features, a quiet observant eye, and a delicate moustache. He is the son of the late Pañgeran Mahomed of Pandasan, whose grave, ornamented with seven-fold umbrellas, we passed on the river's bank.

Knowing we could ride from Abai to Tampasuk, we had brought our English saddles, and were soon mounted on rough ponies, making our way towards the chief's house in an easterly direction. The Baju

saddle, made of wood, covered with thin cloth, is very small. Instead of stirrups they have a rope with a loop in the end, into which they insert their big toes, and ride with the soles of their feet turned up behind; and when they set off on a gallop cling with their toes under the pony's belly.

The Baju is essentially a non-walker. He never makes use of his own legs if he can possibly get an animal to carry him. He rides all the horses and the mares, even when the latter have but just foaled. Cows are equally in requisition, and it was laughable to observe one of these animals with a couple of lads on her back trotting along the pathway, a calf, not a week old, frisking behind her. The water buffalo, however, appeared to be the favourite—the strong beast constantly carrying double. Every man we met had a spear, which was extremely useful in fording rivers, as well as for defence.

We rode at first over a small plain, about two miles in extent, half of which we had to traverse: it was bounded on either side by a low sandstone range, and before us was a connecting ridge, which we had to pass over before entering the Tampasuk district. From its top, we enjoyed a view of the country: beneath us was a plain, extending some miles beyond the river, not very pleasant riding, as every here and there a slushy, muddy stream crossed the path, into which our ponies sunk up to their girths, and found some difficulty in floundering through. There were signs that cultivation is occasionally carried on here, and I should imagine it well adapted for rice-fields. As it happened to be a very warm day, we were not sorry,

after a ride of two miles and a half, to reach the river's bank, where we found a most agreeable shade under gigantic mango-trees. I call them gigantic—they were so for this country, being above two feet in diameter, and probably sixty feet high. Unfortunately, it was not the fruit season. Very few mangoes in Borneo are worth eating, though occasionally we find them with delicate flavour, but nothing to equal the magnificent fruit of Bombay. I was anxious to taste the produce of these trees, as from former intercourse with the Spaniards the natives might have obtained seeds from Manilla, where the fruit arrives at great perfection. Half a mile of shady ride brought us to the ford opposite to the chief's house, where we found the Tampasuk, a hundred yards wide, but not more than three feet deep—clear, cool, and rapid.

After enjoying a pleasant bathe, we strolled on to the chief's house, really a good and comfortable one, and we were agreeably surprised at the excellent accommodation. It was double-storied, with plank walls. The lower part of the house consisted of one great room, surrounded by broad verandahs, the end ones being partially partitioned off. In one of these we were lodged, and found all the ladies of the family engaged in preparing our apartment and covering the floor with nice clean mats of brilliant colours, which, with our own bedding, soon made us comfortable. The great room, or hall, was the chief's, in the centre was an immense resting-place or bed, and behind were heaps of boxes, containing the wealth of the family, piled up behind his pillows, as is the fashion in Sulu. The upper story appears to be reserved for



the daughters and other unmarried girls, who, as their floor was only of split bamboo, could look through and watch all our movements, and the occasional light laughter showed that we afforded them some amusement.

Our host is considered the head of the Bajus in these districts, but his power is more nominal than real. The race is, individually, very independent, no one appearing ready to obey authority, and the same character may be given to their neighbours, the Lanuns and Ida'an. Mengkabong and Tampasuk are the chief ports of the Bajus, though these people are scattered in many other districts, both on this and the north-eastern coast. They were formerly very piratical, and even now are unwilling to let a favourable opportunity pass. Of their proverbial lawlessness one instance may perhaps suffice. A large party proceeded on an expedition to the island of Banguay, where they anchored opposite a village, and commenced trading, being, they said, particularly anxious for tripang, or edible sea-slug. The fishermen dispersed in quest of this article, but had no sooner gone than the crews of the prahus landed, surprised the village, killed or drove away the few men who remained, and captured about twenty-eight women and children. This little incident was much talked of at the time, as the Bajus managed to seize a young bride, just decked out for her wedding, loaded with all the gold ornaments of the village. This young girl, contrary to their usual custom, was, it is said, put up to auction by her captors, as she was too valuable to be one man's share. Yet both the people of Banguay and Mengkabong are claimed by the

•

Brunei Government as its subjects. I have little doubt that, on hearing of this affair, the only reflection of the ministers was—"We wish those Mengkabong people were nearer, that we might have a share of the plunder."

When not engaged in sea expeditions, the Bajus employ themselves in a peddling trade with the aborigines, exchanging nipa salt, with a little iron and cloth, for tobacco and rice, which they sell to the Malays. I must not omit to notice that the Bajus are expert fishermen, and catch and salt a great quantity every year, which they sell to the inhabitants of the hills. Some few have gardens, and plant rice, and, in a lazy, careless way, rear cattle, ponies, and buffaloes. They profess Islamism, but do not probably understand much beyond the outward observances, though they keep the fast with greater strictness than most of the Malays. No one can accuse the Bajus of being a handsome race; they have generally pinched-up, small faces, low foreheads, but bright eyes; the men are short, slight, but very active, particularly in the water; the women have similar features, and are slighter and perhaps taller than the Malay, they wear their hair tied in a knot on the fore part of the head, which has a very unbecoming appearance. I never saw a good-looking face among them, judging even by a Malay standard. The chief had five daughters, as well as five sons—a large family, but a thing by no means rare in Borneo.

We saw many men who differed totally from the above description, but, on inquiry, found they were of mixed breed. I asked one of what race he was. He

answered four—Baju, Lanun, Malay, and Chinese. He was a broad-faced, ugly-looking fellow, one of our guides. Another, rather good-looking, claimed to be descended of four races also—Baju, Sulu, Lanun, and Malay. Many of those we asked were of mixed parentage, which renders it difficult to describe a particular tribe; yet the Baju is a distinct animal from the Malay, and does credit to his name of Sea Gipsy, as he has quite the appearance of that wandering tribe.

We heard much of their differences with the Lanuns, who occupy the mouth of the Tampasuk, and were formerly very powerful on this coast; their own oppressive conduct turned the people of the interior against them, and at Tawaran they were driven out. They were accused of stealing the children of the Ida'an. I say driven out—I should rather have said, teased out. No people in this country can cope with the Lanuns in battle, so the Ida'an kept hovering around their villages to cut off stragglers. At last, no one could leave the houses even to fetch firewood, unless accompanied by a strong armed party, which interfered so much with their piratical pursuits that they at last abandoned the Tawaran, and retired to Tampasuk and Pandasan. Here they were in 1845 attacked by Sir Thomas Cochrane, and their villages burnt. This again broke up their communities, and most of those who were addicted to piracy retired to the north-east coast, to Tungku and the neighbouring rivers. Since then they have gradually so dwindled away in these countries, that now, it is said, they scarcely muster two hundred fighting men. Even

these are under various chiefs, who delight in giving themselves high-sounding names, as Sultan, Rajah, Rajah-Muda, though, perhaps, scarcely able to man a war prahu with their followers.

The present cause of quarrel between the Lanuns and Bajus is theft, mutual reprisals ending in the death of one of the latter. The chief talked of nothing but war; he said he had been advised by the Spanish missionary, Signor Cuarteron, to apply to the Governor of the Spanish settlement of Balabak to assist him in expelling the Lanuns, and that he was determined to do so. I related to him the fable of the horse and his rider, and left him to find out its application. His ready laugh told he had caught the meaning. The chief said he could muster 600 fighting men in Abai and Tampasuk, while the Lanuns had but 150. At Pandasan, the neighbouring district to the northward, the Lanuns could oppose but forty men to 400 Bajus. Still, the latter have no stomach for the fight. I doubt if they give very correct information about the numbers at Pandasan, as in 1851 they were very much more numerous; in fact, several hundreds were then seen around the houses of the chiefs. They themselves said that comparatively few lived on the Tampasuk. Mr. Low ascended the Pandasan and found a village under Pañgeran Mahomed, whose grave we saw on the Abai, and, farther up this shoal and narrow river, he came to the village of Asam, the residence of Pañgeran Merta and other chiefs. Beyond that, on the tongue of land formed by the river dividing, was the village of Sultan Si Tabuk. About twenty-five miles to the

north of Pandasan are the small rivers of Kanio Kanio and Layer Layer, also inhabited by Lanuns. They are very fond of boasting of their courage, and say, if the Europeans would but meet them sword in hand, they would fight them man to man.

I may notice that the Lanuns, Bajus, and Sulus do not shut up their women in the same manner as is practised by the Malays of the capital and most other Mohamedans; on the contrary, they often sit with the men, and enter freely into the subject under discussion. I should like to be able to ascertain whether this comparative freedom renders them more chaste than the Malay women; they could not well be less so. In Sulu, the wives of the chiefs are entrusted with the principal management of accounts, and carry on much of the trade; it is said that they have acquired considerable knowledge from the Manilla captives, who are often of a superior class.

We stayed a day at the chief's house, waiting the arrival of our baggage, for which we had despatched buffaloes. The Baju, to show his hospitality, determined to kill a fatted calf to feast us and our followers. The endeavours, first to catch a cow, then a calf, were very amusing. The beasts were particularly active, half-wild things, and the Bajus gave chase on horse-back, galloping boldly over the rough ground, and through the long grass. We expected every moment to see man and horse roll over, but by dint of hard chasing, at last a half-grown heifer was driven into the enclosure, man, horse, and game being equally blown.

In the afternoon we rode over towards Pandasan, in

search of plants ; from the summit of the first low hill we had a beautiful view of the lovely plain of Tampasuk, extending from the sea far into the interior. Groves of cocoa-nuts were interspersed among the rice grounds, stretching, intermixed with grassy fields, to the sea-shore, fringed by a long line of waving casuarinas. Little hamlets lay scattered in all directions, some distinctly visible, others nearly hidden by the rich green foliage of the fruit-trees. The prospect was bounded on the west by low sandstone hills, whose red colour occasionally showed through the lately-burnt grass, affording a varied tint in the otherwise verdant prospect ; to the south, Kina Balu and its attendant ranges were hidden by clouds.

Riding on over the undulating ground, we entered a plain lying between the districts of Tampasuk and Pandasan ; it looked parched, and was in no way to be compared to the one we had left, and volumes of smoke from the burning grass occasionally obscured the prospect. Here we found a beautiful gardenia, growing on slight elevations, on barren, decomposing rock, and plentiful wherever the land was undulating. It seemed to flourish in positions exposed to the hottest rays of the sun, and in situations where the reflected heat was very great. It is a bush varying from a few inches to two feet in height, and bears flowers of a pure white. We observed some of the shrubs not six inches in height, which were covered with blossoms, yielding a powerful aromatic odour. In fact, as we rode among them, the whole air was filled with their fragrance. I imagine the dwarfing of the plants results from the inferior nature of the soil,

and the great heat which keeps moisture from their roots. The high range dividing these districts from Maludu Bay does not appear to be very far off; in fact, it is but two days' journey on horseback, which, over the mountains, would not be much faster than walking, since the paths are very bad. We galloped home, the natives evidently amused by our novel style of sitting a horse. Our ride had been in a north-easterly direction.

On our arrival at the chief's house, we found all our followers assembled, and the baggage in heaps near our beds, and made preparations for starting next morning. On dividing our luggage, however, it was found that we should require at least a dozen Bajus to assist; these had been promised, but were not forthcoming. Guides to carry nothing were easily procurable, but it being the month of the Ramadhan was an excuse for any amount of laziness.

When we started next morning, the chief came with us a few miles, and helped us with some of his men, so that, having packed up, we were enabled to leave about nine A.M. Our route lay through low land for about a mile and a half, crossing the river once. We stopped at a village situated on and about a low hill. By the way, we saw a herd of fine cattle, both white and piebald—an unusual colour in Borneo; they were in a very flourishing condition, and I endeavoured in vain to make arrangements to transport the whole lot to my grounds near the Consulate. We stayed at a house occupied by Rajah Ali, a Baju, for about an hour, trying to obtain men to take the place of the chief's, who had helped us so far, but could

tempt none who were really useful. We had already four guides, and might have had as many more as we pleased, but porters were not to be procured.

The house where we rested was on top of a little hill, commanding a very extensive prospect: at the foot the river divides into two, one branch stretching away towards the E.S.E., whose course we could trace for eight or ten miles; it then appears to take a southerly direction, towards Kina Balu, from which the natives say it issues: the right-hand branch bore S. by E., and this is visible for several miles—perhaps eight; it then appears to turn more easterly. Near the banks the ground is generally flat, while towards the west the hills are numerous.

Finding it impossible to get men enough to carry all our things, we resolved to push on with those we had, and then send back for the remainder of the baggage. Our impediments were numerous—boxes for specimens, planks with quires of brown paper, besides the cloths and brass wire required to purchase provisions. Every man also was provided with a musket.

Our course lay at first over hills with soil of a reddish colour, but a couple of miles brought us to the low land bordering the river. Here we brought up under a clump of cocoanut palms, to allow our straggling party to collect, and having obtained permission, our men soon secured a supply of the fruit. I have no doubt that many travellers in tropical countries will agree with me, that nothing is more refreshing after a walk in a broiling sun (and it was indeed broiling that day) than a draught of cocoanut-milk, duly tempered with a dash of wine or brandy. For



some time I preferred a glass of sherry or madeira, now I incline to a tablespoonful of brandy, as forming the most agreeable and the safest compound. I have seen to-day a great many clumps of cocoanut-trees very unhealthy, and think they must be injured by the constant drain to which they are subjected by the aborigines extracting toddy from them. These trees belonged to the Piasau Ida'an, whose villages were scattered in every direction. Piasau is the word used by the Borneans of the capital for cocoanut.

While reclining under the shade of these palm-trees, we had a beautiful view of the country beyond. The Tampasuk flowed past us, bubbling and breaking over its uneven bed, here shallower, and therefore broader, than usual. To the left the country was open, almost to the base of the great mountain; to the right the land was more hilly, and Saduk Saduk showed itself as a high peak, but dwarfed by its neighbourhood to Kina Balu, whose rocky precipices looked now of a purple colour. The summit was beautiful and clear, and I remained in earnest study of its features till aroused by an exclamation of my companion, who, pointing to a remarkable indentation surmounting an apparently huge fissure in gloomy shade, said, "I am sure that is the spot where I left a bottle in 1851." With the aid of a telescope we could distinctly note the position of every crag, and I determined, if possible, to visit that fissure, and see if the bottle still remained. Kina Balu looked more grand to-day than ever, as there were no hills intervening to mar its noble proportions. I made a sketch of the crags on the summit in order to recognize them

again, if we should be sufficiently fortunate to reach them.

Having collected our party, now amounting to about thirty, we moved on. Our path lay near the river, which we had to ford eight times, and where the stream was rapid, the operation proved very fatiguing. Between the reaches our track ran over granite *débris* of the size of coarse sand, and it was so hot that it felt painful through our shoes, and those who were barefoot danced along over it as if they were on burning stones. We fully intended to have reached the village of Ghinambur, but having had so many detentions, found that at four P.M. it was still several miles off, so it was useless to expect to arrive there that night. We determined, therefore, to put up at the farm-houses of the Buñgol Ida'an, built conveniently on the banks of the river. It had been threatening rain, which came on before the evening closed in. Our general direction all day had been a little to the east of south.

The chief of Tampasuk had promised to accompany us himself, but the fast gave him an excellent excuse not to do so; he, however, sent some men as guides, whom he called his relations. They of course came, fancying that by trading for us with the Ida'an they would be enabled to make a great profit beyond the regular pay. They did not fail to let us know their intentions, by saying that the Ida'an were asking half a dollar's worth of goods for a fowl, so we declined taking it, telling the Bajus we were well aware that they themselves could get a dozen for the same amount. We expected and intended to let them cheat us moderately, but this was too barefaced. Having tin meats,—so managed

to make an excellent dinner without the fowl. Such provisions are certainly of great assistance to travellers, but the addition of a fowl, or of any fresh vegetable, takes away that unpleasant taste always observable in preserved meats.

It was here I first saw natives ploughing. Their plough is of a very simple construction, and serves rather to scratch the ground than really to turn it over: it is made entirely of wood, and is drawn by a buffalo, and its action is the same as if a pointed stick had been dragged through the land to the depth of about four inches. After ploughing, they use a rough kind of harrow. Simple as this agriculture is, it is superior to anything existing south of Brunei, and it would be interesting to investigate the causes which have rendered this small part of Borneo, between the capital and Maludu Bay, so superior in agriculture to the rest. I think it is obviously a remnant of Chinese civilization. I must elsewhere dwell upon the Chinese intercourse, as it is too extensive a subject to be introduced into a journal while waiting for the cook to get dinner ready. The farm hut in which we spent the night was about twelve feet by six, and of exceedingly neat construction: the bamboo was employed for posts, and split afforded both good flooring and walls; the roofing leaves were also excellent, and made from the sago palm. The musquitoes were very numerous, and soon drove us to bed, though the natives assert that these insects are not to be found near running water—a statement which experience completely disproves.

The farmhouse we occupied was one of many

scattered over a narrow plain, perhaps four or five hundred yards in breadth, which skirted the banks of the river, for several miles. It was evident that these Ida'an kept this land under continued cultivation, and that each portion was strictly private property. We found every house had about four acres of ground belonging to its owner, which were divided from one another by slight embankments. The soil appeared of admirable quality—in fact, a rich black mould. Heaps of panicles were lying near the houses, and the amount seemed to show that their last crop must have been a very good one.

Some of the Buñgol Ida'an coming down from their villages, we sent three of them with buffaloes to fetch the baggage that had been left at Rajah Ali's house, and moved on a little before ten for Ghinambur, intending to await their arrival. Our path lay along the left bank, over low ground covered with long grass and brushwood, which prevented our obtaining other than glimpses of the mountain, but at a rapid we had a good view. The Baju guides gave these Ida'an the character of great thieves, and requested us to have everything carefully put away at night, affirming that the inhabitants of the plain were of a different character from those on the hills. It may be so, but we have never found the aborigines inclined to pilfer; on the contrary, they are remarkably honest, and should these prove to be of a different disposition, it will be an unique instance. At Ghinambur, as at Buñgol, we could not purchase fowls except at absurd rates, which we declined. It is curious that these people show no hospitality—never

offering us a single thing, but, instead, trying to over-reach us in every transaction.

The house in which we lodged was the best I have ever seen among the aborigines: it was boarded with finely-worked planks, the doors were strong and excellently made, with a small opening for the dogs to go in and out, everything looked clean—quite an unusual peculiarity. The flooring of beaten-out bamboos was very neat, and free from all dirt, which I have never before noticed in a Dayak house, where the dogs generally render everything filthy.

These Ida'an are very good specimens of the interior people—clear-skinned, free from disease, with pleasant, good-humoured countenances. None of the women are good-looking, yet they would not be called ugly. We noticed these peculiarities: that all the girls and young women wore a piece of black cloth to conceal their bosoms, which was held in its place by strips of coloured rattans, and their petticoats were longer than usual, a practice that might have been followed with advantage by their elders. The young girls also had the front of the head shaved, after the manner of the Chinese.

I did not notice that any of the men were tattooed, but during our day's journey we met many large parties of Ida'an loaded with tobacco, who were on their way to the sea coast to trade, among whom there were some ornamented in this fashion:—a tattooed band two inches broad, stretched in an arc from each shoulder, meeting on the stomach, then turning off to the hips; others had likewise a band extending from the shoulders to the hands. They

were all small, slight men, and armed with spears and swords.

As we were the first Europeans who had ever penetrated so far into the country, we excited great curiosity, particularly among the female portion of the tribe; every action was watched and commented upon, though I am bound to state that my little China boy, Ahtan, with his long tail, excited equal surprise, and when the black Madras cook commenced operations, we were totally abandoned, and a most attentive crowd collected round him, watching his every motion. As he proceeded to prepare the curry and the stew, the pressure became too great for his patience, so that he ran out declaring he could not cook the dinner. The crowd then drew back a little, but his actions did not escape the most attentive inspection.

We were told there was another extensive village of their people on the slope of the hills, embowered in groves of fruit-trees. It is a great advantage to live on the banks of a running stream, as all the population can keep themselves clean by frequent bathing. Another great preventive to disease is their having sufficient food; they appear well off, with plenty of buffaloes and cattle—a contrast, indeed, to their miserable brethren on the Limbang.

We soon began to find the effect of starting without proper shoes: yesterday my boots had blistered one heel so much that I determined to walk barefooted. Mr. Low's feet became likewise so painful that he made up his mind to follow my example.

Our baggage did not arrive till the morning of the

next day, when we were detained to procure men to carry it. At last Suñgat, the chief, agreed to follow us with six of the villagers. We started about eleven. Our course lay along the banks of the river, cutting off the points, and occasionally in the bed of the old stream. It having rained in the night, the river was somewhat swollen, which prevented either ourselves or our men fording it without Baju assistance; this rendered our progress slow. Mr. Low having never before walked without shoes, suffered much in passing over the pebbles, which were heated by the bright mid-day sun, and I also, though more used to it, felt it very much occasionally: in four hours we did not make more than three miles.

Having passed a very deep ford at 2.45 P.M., we agreed to stop for the night, and pitched our tents on the banks of the river on some dry sand, to have the benefit of the cool water that flowed by. We might have gone to the Ida'an houses, but preferred the independence of our own tents, both as more cool and less crowded; besides, we were there free from the suspicion of insects. The fords we passed during the day were composed of black sand, with small blocks of granite and serpentine mixed with sandstone.

The name of this place was Batong: from it Kina Balu bore S.E., and Saduk Saduk  $15^{\circ}$  east of south; the latter appears from this view to be a peaked mountain between 5,000 and 6,000 feet high. Kina Balu of course absorbed our attention, and as night drew near the sun shone brightly on its peaks, and gave it a very smiling appearance. The summit

seemed free from all vegetation, and streams of water were dashing over the precipices.

Started next morning at a quarter to eight, and soon arrived at a place where the river divides, the Penantaran coming from an E.N.E. direction. Its bed was full of large blocks of serpentine (though after passing the mouth of this branch we met with very few specimens of that kind of rock). There is a village of the same name as the branch close to the junction. We followed the right-hand stream—direction about south—keeping close to the margin, crossing and recrossing continually, seeing occasionally a few houses. We were now passing through sandstone ranges, but the country had no remarkable features. At 9.40, stopped to breakfast, having made about four miles; our followers gradually closed up. At eleven we pushed on again. Huge granite boulders are now common, and under the shelter of one mighty stone we rested for half an hour, waiting the arrival of our straggling followers.

One of the greatest advantages of travelling with an intelligent companion is the interchange of ideas, and consequently the more accurate noting of observations. As we sat beneath the shade of the huge granite boulder, surrounded on all sides by sandstone hills, we could not but speculate how it came there. Without having recourse to the glacier theory, the reason appeared to me simple. It is evident that the level of the country was very much higher in former times than at present, and that water is the great agent by which these changes have been effected.



The streams continually cut their way deeper in the soil, as we may daily observe: the increasing steepness causes innumerable landslips, and the process going on for ages, the whole level of the country is changed, and plains are formed from the detritus at the mouths of the rivers. Huge granite masses, falling originally from the lofty summit of Kina Balu, would gradually slip or roll down the ever-forming slopes which nature is never weary of creating.

In ascending some of the steeps rising on either side of the streams near Kina Balu, we continually came across boulders of granite, which, in comparatively few years, will, through landslips, roll many hundred feet into the stream below, to commence their gradual movement from the mountain. I have continually come across evidences of the Bornean rivers having flowed at a much higher level than at present, finding layers of water-worn pebbles, a hundred feet above the actual surface of the streams. In Borneo, where the rain falls so heavily, the power of water is immense. After a heavy storm, the torrents rise in confined spaces often fifty feet within a few hours, and the rush of the stream would move any but the largest rocks, and wash away most of the effects of the landslips.

Standing on a height overlooking a large extent of country, it is instructive to be able to survey at a glance the great effect caused by the rivers and all their tributaries, deep gullies marking every spot where an accession joins the parent stream. After heavy rains, the rivers present the colour of *café au lait*, from the large amount of matter held in temporary

suspension, and on taking out a glassful, I have been surprised by the amount of sediment which has immediately fallen to the bottom.

The walk was becoming rather tiring, drizzling rain rendering the stones very slippery, and haying continually to make the mountain torrent our path, it was severe work for our bare feet. The rain continuing, and the stream rapidly rising, we halted at some farm-houses in the midst of a long rice-field. Fording the river is difficult work; the water rushing down at headlong speed, renders it necessary to exert one's utmost strength to avoid being carried away: the pole in both hands, placed well to seaward, one foot advanced cautiously before the other, to avoid the slippery rocks and loose stones. I found that this fatigued me more than walking. The water becomes much cooler as we approach the mountain, while the ground is rapidly increasing in elevation. The river was full of Ida'an fish-traps, made by damming up half the stream, and forcing the water and fish to pass into a huge bamboo basket. These traps appeared to require much labour in the construction, particularly in the loose stone walls or dams. As we advanced, we found the whole stream turned into one of them, in which they captured very fine fish, particularly after heavy rain. I bought one which had large scales, about eighteen inches long, and of delicious flavour.

• To see the young Ida'an ford the stream, raised both my envy and my admiration; with the surging waters reaching to their armpits, with a half-dancing motion, they crossed as if it were no exertion at all.

So much for practice. During the last three hours we did not make more than four miles, though out of the stream the paths were good. The rain continuing to pour heavily, we determined to stop, as I have said, at these Ida'an huts, which were situated opposite the landing-place of the village of Tambatuan, concealed by the brow of a steep hill rising on the other bank. We sent a party there to buy rice, which became cheaper as we advanced: these villages also possessed abundance of cattle and buffaloes. We were much pleased to find the great confidence shown by the people: we often met parties of women and girls, and on no occasion did they run away screaming at the unusual sight of a white face. Several of them came this afternoon to look at us, and remained quite near for some time, interested in watching our proceedings. Kina Balu was cloud-hidden this evening.

During the night our rest was much disturbed by bees, which stung us several times, and Mr. Low, with that acuteness which never deserts him in all questions of natural history, pronounced them to be the "tame" bees, the same as he had last seen thirteen years before among the Senah Dayaks in Sarawak. About midnight we were visited by a big fellow, who, our guides assured us, wanted to pilfer, but we found next morning that he had come to complain of his hives having been plundered. On inquiry, we discovered the man who had done the deed. He was fined three times the value of the damage, and the amount handed over to the owner.

A great many questions were asked as to what could be our object in visiting Kina Balu: to tell them

that it was for curiosity would have been useless : to say that we were seeking new kinds of ferns, nepenthes, or flowers, would not have been much more satisfactory. Some thought we were searching for copper or for gold, while others were equally convinced we were looking for precious stones. One man sagaciously observed that we were seeking the *Lagundi* tree, whose fruit, if eaten, would restore our youth and enable us to live for countless years, and that tree was to be found on the very summit of Kina Balu. To-day an Ida'an came, I suppose to try us, and said he knew of copper not more than half a day's journey from our path, offering to take us to it, but seeing we were not to be tempted, another told us of a tree of copper to be found a few miles off, yet even that did not alter our determination to make the best of our way to the mountain. We left the questioners sadly puzzled as to what possibly could be our object in ascending Kina Balu.

All the Bajus and Borneans are convinced that there is a lake on the very summit of this mountain, and ask, if it be not so, how is it that continual streams of water flow down its sides. They forget that very few nights pass without there being rain among the lofty crags, even when it is dry on the plains. Sometimes the sun, shining on particular portions of the granite, gives it an appearance of great brilliancy, and those who formerly ascended the summit with Mr. Low, reported that whenever they approached the spot where these diamonds showed themselves at a distance, they invariably disappeared : as these men have a perfect faith in every wild imagination of the *Arabian*

*Nights*, they easily convinced themselves and their auditors that the jinn would not permit them to take them. The old story of the great diamond, guarded on the summit of Kina Balu by a ferocious dragon, arose probably from some such cause. The Malays are great storytellers, and these wonders interest them. I may notice that most of the men that were with us on this journey had accompanied us to the mountain of Molu the preceding February, and then one of the Borneans commenced a story which lasted the seventeen days we were away, and he occasionally went on with it during our present expedition. It was the history of an unfortunate princess, who for "seven days and seven nights neither eat nor drank, but only wept."

Opposite our resting-place we observed some remarkably elegant tree ferns, whose stems rose occasionally to the height of ten feet, and with their long leaves bending gracefully on every side, were an ornament to the river's bank. We have noticed as yet but little old forest. The only fine trees we saw were near the villages, and these were preserved for their fruits. Where the land is not cultivated, it is either covered with brushwood, or trees of a young growth.

Drizzling rain prevented our departure till near eight, when we continued our course along the rice-fields: we had been told we should find the path very difficult, but were agreeably surprised by its proving dry and principally among plantations of kiladi. We crossed the river only five times, and passed over a sandstone range about five hundred feet above the

plain. The stream had now become a perfect mountain torrent, breaking continually over rocks.

Occasionally the fords were difficult, as the incessant rains rendered the river very full. At one place where an island divides the Tampasuk, it was so deep that we found it necessary to swim over, and only a very expert man could have done it, as the water rushed down with great force. The Bajus, however, were quite prepared; they did not attempt to cross in a direct course, but allowed themselves to be carried away a little, and reached the other side about fifty yards farther down. They did it very cleverly, carrying all our luggage over, little by little, swimming with one hand and holding the baskets in the air with the other. As we could not swim, two men placed themselves, one on either side of us, told us to throw ourselves flat on the water, and remain passive, and in a few minutes we were comfortably landed on the opposite bank, drenched to the skin, it is true, but we had scarcely had any dry clothes on us during the whole journey; however, no sooner did we arrive at our resting-places, than we stripped, bathed, rubbed ourselves into a glow, and put on dry clothes. Nothing is so essential as this precaution, and I have twice had severe attacks of fever from neglecting it. The hills as we advanced began closing in on the river's banks, leaving occasionally but a narrow strip of flat ground near the stream.

• At 11.20 A.M. we reached Koung, a large, scattered village on a grassy plain: it is a very pretty spot, the greensward extending to the river's banks, where the cattle and buffaloes graze, and about a hundred feet

up the side of a neighbouring hill, is another portion of the village. The roaring torrent foams around, affording delicious spots for bathing, the water being delightfully cool. In the bed of the stream there were masses of angular granite, mixed with the water-worn boulders. It was the first time we had ever seen it of that sharp form, but similar blocks were afterwards noticed on the summit.

One cannot help having one's attention continually drawn to the air of comfort, or, rather, to the appearance of native wealth observable among the Ida'an: food in abundance, with cattle, pigs, fowls, rice, and vegetables, and no one near them to plunder or exact. Accustomed as I had been to the aborigines around the capital, the contrast struck me forcibly. It was pleasant to notice the luxuriant growth of the wild raspberry around this village; it was the first time I had seen the plant since I left England in 1848.

Next day we hoped to reach Kiau, the village from which Mr. Low started for the mountain in the spring of 1851. It was said we should find some difficulty in getting from that place, but we thought perhaps the reports arose from tribal jealousy. At four P.M., Koung: barometer,  $28\cdot678^{\circ}$ ; thermometer,  $77\cdot5^{\circ}$ ; unattached,  $78\cdot3^{\circ}$ . So that this village must be about 1,500 feet above the level of the sea, a very rapid rise for the stream in so short a distance. The sandstone hill we crossed to-day had the same characteristics as those I had observed up the Sakarang, Batang Lupar, and near the capital—all being very steep with narrow ridges, and buttresses occasionally springing from their

sides, and on the one we crossed to-day was a quantity of red shale.

Near our last night's resting-place, I noticed, for the first time on this river, some sago palms ; they have again shown themselves below Koung, and there are a few round the village, but neither these trees nor coconut nor areca palms are plentiful. At every village I made inquiries about cotton plantations, but, like the men with tails, they were always to be found a little farther off ; yet we know cotton must be grown somewhere in this neighbourhood, as at the very moment I was writing my journal I saw an old woman engaged spinning yarn from native material. The Lanuns also furnish a cloth which is highly prized among every class of inhabitants in Borneo ; it is a sort of checked black fabric, with narrow lines of white running through it, and glazed on one side. This was formerly made entirely of native yarn ; but I am afraid this industry will soon decline, as connoisseurs are already beginning to discover that the Lanun women, finding English yarn so cheap, are using it in preference, though it renders the article much less durable. It is also worthy of notice that this cloth is dyed from indigo grown on the spot. The Ida'an purchase their supplies of cotton of the Inserban and Tuhan Ida'an who live on the road to the lake of Kina Balu, while the Bajus obtain theirs from the Lobas near Maludu Bay. I saw a plant growing near the hut where we rested one night ; it was about ten feet high, and covered with flowers.

They told us at Koung that the Ida'an were at war ; but though they may have quarrels, they must



be trifling, as we met every day women and children by themselves at considerable distances from their houses. Besides, parties of a dozen men and boys of the supposed enemies passed us on their way to Tampasuk to trade, and in none of their villages did we notice heads.

All these people appear to pay particular attention to the cultivation of the kiladi (arum), planting it in their fields immediately after gathering in the rice crop, and keeping it well weeded : they grow it everywhere, and it must afford them abundance of food. It is in shape something like a beetroot, and has the flavour of a yam. Roasted in the ashes, and brought smoking hot to table, torn open, and adding a little butter, pepper, and salt, it is very palatable, particularly among those hills.

Saduk bore N.E. and Kina Balu due E. from the southern portion of the village.

Started about seven in a S.E. by E. direction, ascending a hill on which the village of Labang Labang is situated : here occurred a lively scene. Mr. Low and I, with a few men, were walking ahead of the party, when, as we passed the first house, an old woman came to the door, and uttered some sentences which struck us as sounding like curses : however, we took no notice, but on approaching the farther end of the village, we were hailed by an ugly-looking fellow, with an awful squint, who told us to stop, as we should not pass through his village : this was evidently a prepared scene, as the whole of the population immediately collected together fully armed : so we did stop to discuss the point. We asked him what he

meant: he answered that they had never had good crops since Mr. Low ascended the mountain in 1851, and gave many other sapient reasons why we should not ascend it now; but he wound up by saying that if we would pay a slave as black mail, they would give us permission to pass and do as we pleased: this proved to us that nothing but extortion was intended, yet, to avoid any disagreeable discussion, we offered to make him a present of forty yards of grey shirting, but this proposition was not listened to, and he and his people became very insolent in their manner.

We sent back one of the men to hurry up the stragglers, and in the meantime continued the discussion. They then said they would take us up the mountain if we would start from their village; but being unwilling to risk a disappointment, we declined. They remembered how the Kiau villagers had turned back Mr. Lobb, because he would not submit to their extortions, and thought they might do the same with us. As the Ida'an were shaking their spears and giving other hostile signs, we thought it time to bring this affair to a climax, so I ordered the men to load their muskets, and Mr. Low, stepping up to the chief with his five-barrelled pistol, told the interpreter to explain that we were peaceable travellers, most unwilling to enter into any contest, but having obtained the permission of the Government of the country, we were determined to proceed, that if they carried out their threats of violence, he would shoot five with his revolver, and that I was prepared to do the same with mine, that they might, by superior numbers, overcome

us at last, but in the meantime we would make a desperate fight.

This closed the scene : as long as we had only half a dozen with us, they were bullies ; but as our forces began to arrive, and at last amounted to fifty men, with twenty musket-barrels shining among them, they became as gentle as lambs, and said they would take two pieces of grey shirting, but we refused to give way, keeping to our original offer, and then only if the chief would follow us on our return, and receive it at Tampasuk. We ordered the men to advance, and we would close up the rear : no opposition was offered, on the contrary, the chief accompanied us on our road, and we had no more trouble with the Labang Labang people. We were detained forty minutes by this affair. Our guides explained the matter to us : when Mr. Low was here last time, many reports were spread of the riches which the Kiaus had obtained from the white man, and they were jealous that the other branch of their tribe should obtain the wealth that was passing from them through their village. The Koung people tried to persuade us to start from their place, and as they were very civil we should have liked to oblige them, but they were uncertain whether they could take us to the summit. Mr. Lobb, when he reached Kiau, had but a small party, and was unarmed, so they would not allow him to pass, except on terms that were totally inadmissible.

Immediately after leaving the village, we descended a steep and slippery path to one of the torrents into which the Tampasuk now divides. After crossing it, we were at the base of the spur on which the village

of Kiau is situated. We crossed several purling streams which descended, in a winding course, the face of the hill. From one spot in our walk, we had a beautiful view of two valleys, cultivated on both banks, with the foaming streams dashing among the rocks below. Over the landscape were scattered huts, which had the peculiarity of being flat-roofed: the Kiaus using the split bamboo as the Chinese use their tiles; the canes being arranged side by side across the whole roof, with their concave sides upwards to catch the rain, then a row is placed convex to cover the edges of the others, and prevent moisture passing through. They are quite water-tight, and afforded an excellent hint for travellers where bamboos abound.

The latter portion of the road was difficult climbing, the clay being slippery from last night's showers, but as we approached our resting-place, the walking became easier. Kiau is a large village on the southern side of a spur, and the houses scattered on its face are prettily concealed from each other by clumps of cocoanuts and bamboos. It covers a great extent of ground, but is badly placed, being many hundred feet above the torrent. The inhabitants supplied themselves with drinking-water from small rills which were led in bamboos to most of their doors. We brought up at about eleven, our course being generally E.S.E. Thermometer  $73^{\circ}$  at twelve in the house. We felt it chilly, and took to warm clothing.

• The Kiaus are much dirtier than any tribes I have seen in the neighbourhood; the children and women are unwashed, and most of them are troubled with colds, rendering them in every sense unpleasant neigh-

bours. In fact, to use the words of an experienced traveller, “they cannot afford to be clean,” their climate is chilly, and they have no suitable clothing. We observed that the features of many of these people were very like the Chinese—perhaps a trace of that ancient kingdom of Celestials which tradition fixes in this neighbourhood. They all showed the greatest and most childlike curiosity at everything either we or our servants did.

In the afternoon, Lemaing, Mr. Low’s old guide, came in. Mr. Low recognized his voice immediately, though seven years had passed since he had heard it. Sir James Brooke has also a most extraordinary faculty for remembering voices, as well as names, even of natives whom he has only seen once. It is very useful, and I have often heard the awkwardness which arises from my quickly forgetting both voices and names.

Shortly after Lemaing’s arrival, a dispute arose between him and Lemoung, the chief of the house in which we were staying; both grew excited, at last they jumped up, and each spat upon the floor in a paroxysm of mutual defiance: here we interposed to preserve the peace, and calm being restored, it was found that seven years ago they had disputed about the division of Mr. Low’s goods, and the quarrel had continued ever since—the whole amount being about a pound sterling in value. Lemoung said that his house had been burnt down in consequence of the white man ascending Kina Balu, and that no good crops of rice had grown since; but it was all envy, he thought in the distribution of the property he had not secured a

fair share. We asked if he had ascended the mountain; he said no, but his son had brought some rice, for which, on inquiry, we found he had been paid. Drizzling rain the whole afternoon.

The thermometer registered 66° last night, and we enjoyed our sleep under blankets. At mid-day we took out the barometer from its case, but found to our inexpressible vexation, that it was utterly 'smashed. This was sufficient to destroy half the pleasure of the ascent; in fact, our spirits were much depressed by the accident, and Mr. Low's feet were getting worse. At twelve, thermometer 77°. (The lamentable accident so disgusted me that I find no further entry in that day's journal, but a pencilled note remarks that the Ida'an preserve their rice in old bamboos, two fathoms long, which are placed on one side of the doorway. It is said that these bamboos are preserved for generations, and, in fact, they looked exceedingly ancient.)

The next night the thermometer registered 69°. At early dawn we heard the war-drums beating in several houses, and shouts and yells from the boys. The people in our house said it was a fête day, but we rightly guessed it had reference to our expedition. For some time the guide Lemaing did not make his appearance, and a few young fellows on the hill over the village threw stones as we appeared at the door—a very harmless demonstration, as they were several hundred yards off—but discharging and cleaning a revolver lessened the amount of hostile shouting. About noon the guide made his appearance; the women seemed to enjoy the scene, and followed us to

witness the skirmish ; but the enemy, if there were an enemy, did not show, and the promised ambush came to nothing—it was but a trick of Lemoung to try and disgust Lemaing, and frighten us by the beating of drums and shouting. At the place where we were assured an attack would be made, we found but a few harmless women carrying tobacco.

Our path lay along the side of the hill on which the village stands ; we followed it about four miles in an easterly direction, and then descended to a torrent, one of the feeders of the Tampasuk, where we determined to spend the night, as Mr. Low's feet were becoming very swollen and painful, and it was as well to collect the party. We had passed through considerable fields of sweet potatoes, kiladi, and tobacco, where the path was crossed occasionally by cool rills from the mountains. We enjoyed the cold water very much, and had a delightful bath. The torrent comes tumbling down, and forms many fine cascades. Mr. Low botanized a little, notwithstanding that his feet were suppurating. The hut in which we spent the night was very pretty-looking, flat-roofed, built entirely of bamboos.

To-day, we had a specimen of the thieving of our Ida'an followers. One man was caught burying a tin of sardines, another stole a Bologna sausage, for which, when hungry, I remembered him, and another a fowl.

Next morning Mr. Low found it impossible to walk, and I was therefore obliged to start for the mountain without him. We showed our perfect confidence in the villagers of Kiau by dividing our party, leaving

only four men with Mr. Low to take care of the muskets, while we carried with us up the mountain nothing but our swords and one revolver. They must have thought us a most extraordinary people, but we knew that their demonstrations of hostility were really harmless, and more aimed against each other than against us. Probably, had we appeared afraid, it might have been a different matter.

Our course was at first nearly east up the sub-spur of a great buttress. The walking was severe, from the constant and abrupt ascents and descents, and the narrowness of the path when it ran along the sides of the hill, where it was but the breadth of the foot. At one place we had a view of a magnificent cascade. The stream that runs by the cave, which was to be one of our resting-places, falls over the rocks forming minor cascades ; then coming to the edge of the precipice, it throws itself over, and in its descent of above fifteen hundred feet appears to diffuse itself in foam, ere it is lost in the depths of the dark-wooded ravines below.

I soon found I had made a great mistake in permitting these active mountaineers to lead the way at their own pace, as before twelve o'clock I was left alone with them, all my men being far behind, as they were totally unaccustomed to the work. Arriving at a little foaming rivulet, I sat down and waited for the rest of the party, who, when they came up, appeared so exhausted that I had compassion on them, and agreed to spend the night here. The Ida'an were very dissatisfied, and declared they would not accompany us, if we intended to make such short journeys ; but we



assured them that we would go on alone if they left us, and not pay them the stipulated price for leading us to the summit. I soon set the men to work to build a hut of long poles, over which we could stretch our oiled cloths, and to make a raised floor to secure us from being wet through by the damp moss and heavy rain sure to fall during the night. At three P.M. the thermometer fell to 65°, which to the children of the plain rendered the air unpleasantly cold, but we worked hard to collect boughs and leaves to make our beds soft, and wood was eagerly sought for to kindle fires in the holes beneath our raised floor. This filled the place with smoke, but gave some warmth.

The Ida'an again tried to get back, but I would not receive their excuse that they would be up early in the morning: they then set hard at work going through incantations to drive away sickness. The guide Lemaing carried an enormous bundle of charms, and on him fell the duty of praying or repeating some forms, which he continued for two hours by my watch. To discover what he said, or the real object to whom he addressed himself, was almost impossible through the medium of our bad interpreters, but I could hear him repeating my name, and they said he was addressing the spirits of his ancestors and imploring their forgiveness for invading in our company their place of rest, for it is the belief of all the Ida'an that the summit of Kina Balu is the heaven of their race.

The thermometer registered 57° last night in the tent. Started at seven; I secured a fine yellow sweet-scented rhododendron on a decaying tree, and con-

tinuing the ascent, after an hour's severe walking, reached the top of the ridge. There it was better for a short time, but the forest, heavily hung with moss, is exposed to the full force of the south-west monsoon, and the trees are bent across the path, leaving occasionally only sufficient space to crawl through. We soon came upon the magnificent pitcher-plant, the *Nepenthes Lowii*, which, Mr. Low was anxious to obtain. We could find no young plants, but took cuttings, which the natives said would grow.

Stopped to breakfast at a little swampy spot, where the trees were becoming very stunted, though in positions protected from the winds they grew to a great height. Continuing our course, we came upon a jungle, appearing to be composed almost entirely of rhododendrons, some with beautiful pink, crimson, or yellow flowers. I sat near one for about half an hour apparently in intense admiration, but, in fact, very tired and breathless, and anxious about my followers, only one of whom had kept up with me.

Finding it useless to wait longer, as the mist was beginning to roll down from the summit, and the white plain of clouds below appeared rising, I pushed on to the cave, which we intended to occupy. It was a huge granite boulder, resting on the hill side, that sheltered us but imperfectly from the cold wind. The Ida'an, during the day, amused themselves in trying to secure some small twittering birds, which looked like canaries, with a green tint on the edges of their wings, but were unsuccessful. They shot innumerable pellets from their blowpipes, but did not obtain

one. In fact, they did not appear to use this instrument with any skill.

At four o'clock the temperature of the air was  $52^{\circ}$ , and of the water  $48^{\circ}$ .

Some of my men did not reach us till after dark, and it was with great difficulty that I could induce the Malays to exert themselves to erect the oiled cloths, to close the mouth of the cave, and procure sufficient firewood. They appeared paralyzed by the cold, and were unwilling to move.

During the night the thermometer at the entrance of the cave fell to  $36^{\circ} 5'$ ; and on my going out to have a look at the night-scene, all the bushes and trees appeared fringed with hoarfrost.

After breakfasting at the cave, we started for the summit. Our course lay at first through a thick, low jungle, full of rhododendrons, it then changed into a stunted brushwood, almost hiding the rarely-used path, gradually the shrubs gave way to rocks, and then we commenced our ascent over the naked granite. A glance upwards from the spot where we first left the jungle, revealed a striking scene—a face of granite sweeping steeply up for above 3,000 feet to a rugged edge of pointed rocks; while on the farthest left the southern peak looked from this view a rounded mass. Here and there small runnels of water passed over the granite surface, and patches of brushwood occupied the sheltered nooks. The rocks were often at an angle of nearly forty degrees, so that I was forced to ascend them, at first with woollen socks, and when they were worn through, with bare feet. It was a sad alternative, as the rough

stone wore away the skin, and left a bleeding and tender surface.

After hard work, we reached the spot where Mr. Low had left a bottle in 1851, and found it intact—the writing in it was not read, as I returned it unopened to its resting-place.

Low's Gully is one of the most singular spots in the summit. We ascend an abrupt ravine, with towering perpendicular rocks on either side, till a rough natural wall bars the way. Climbing on this, you look over a deep chasm, surrounded on three sides by precipices, so deep that the eye could not reach the bottom, but the twitter of innumerable swallows could be distinctly heard, as they flew in flocks below. There was no descending here: it was a sheer precipice of several thousand feet, and this was the deep fissure pointed out to me by Mr. Low from the cocoa-nut grove on the banks of the Tampasuk when we were reclining there, and proved that he had remembered the very spot where he had left the bottle.

I was now anxious to reach one of those peaks which are visible from the sea; so we descended Low's Gully, through a thicket of rhododendrons, bearing a beautiful blood-coloured flower, and made our way to the westward. It was rough walking at first, while we continued to skirt the rocky ridge that rose to our right, but gradually leaving this, we advanced up an incline composed entirely of immense slabs of granite, and reaching the top, found a noble terrace, half a mile in length, whose sides sloped at an angle of thirty degrees on either side. The ends were the

Southern Peak and a huge cyclopean wall fringing a precipice.

I followed the guides to the former, and after a slippery ascent, reached the summit. I have mentioned that this peak has a rounded aspect when viewed from the eastward; but from the northward it appears to rise sharply to a point; and when with great circumspection I had crawled up, I found myself on a granite point, not three feet in width, with but a water-worn way a few inches broad to rest on, and prevent my slipping over the sloping edges.

During the climbing to-day, I suffered slightly from shortness of breath, and felt some disinclination to bodily exertion, but as soon as I sat down on this lofty point, it left me, and a feeling came on as if the air rendered me buoyant and made me long to float away.

Quietly seated here, I first turned my attention to the other peaks, which stretch in a curved line from east to west, and was rather mortified to find that the most westerly and another to the east appeared higher than where I sat, but certainly not more than a hundred feet. The guides called this the mother of the mountain, but her children may have outgrown her. Turning to the south-west, I could but obtain glimpses of the country, as many thousand feet below masses of clouds passed continually over the scene, giving us but a partial view of sea, and rivers, and hills. One thing immediately drew my attention, and that was a very lofty peak towering above the clouds, bearing S.  $\frac{1}{2}$  E. It appeared to be an immense distance off, and I thought it might be the great mountain of Lawi, of

which I went in search some months later, but it must be one much farther to the eastward, and may be the summit of Tilong, which, as I have before mentioned, many declare to be much more lofty than Kina Balu itself.

Immediately below me, the granite for a thousand feet sloped sharply down to the edge of that lofty precipice which faces the valley of Pinokok to the southwest. I felt a little nervous while we were passing along this to reach the southern peak, as on Mr. Low's former expedition a Malay had slipped at a less formidable spot, and been hurried down the steep incline at a pace that prevented any hope of his arresting his own progress, when, leaning on his side, his kris fortunately entered a slight cleft, and stayed him on the verge of a precipice.

Among the detached rocks and in the crevices grew a kind of moss, on which the Ida'an guides declared the spirits of their ancestors fed. A grass also was pointed out that served for the support of the ghostly buffaloes which always followed their masters to the other world. As a proof, the print of a foot was shown me as that of a young buffalo; it was not very distinct, but appeared more like the impression left by a goat or deer.

Our guides became very nervous as the clouds rose and now occasionally topped the precipice, and broke, and swept up the slopes, enveloping us. They urged me to return; I unwillingly complied, though I saw it was necessary, for the wind was rising, and the path we were to follow was hidden in mist.

We found the air pleasantly warm and very invigo-

rating; the thermometer marked  $62^{\circ}$  in the shade; and as we perceived little rills of water oozing from among the granite rocks, the summit would prove a much better encamping ground than our cold cave, where the sun never penetrates. The Ida'an, however, feared to spend one night in this abode of spirits, and declined carrying up my luggage.

Our return was rather difficult, as the rolling mist rendered the rocks slippery, but we all reached the cave in safety. Here I received a note from Mr. Low, but he was still unable to walk. The bathing water was  $49^{\circ}$ .

During the night the temperature fell, and the registering thermometer marked only  $41^{\circ}$ . My feet were so injured by yesterday's walking that I was unable to reascend the mountain to collect plants and flowers, so sent my head man Musa with a large party. I, however, strolled about a little to look for seeds and a sunny spot, as the ravine in which our temporary home was, chilled me through. I was continually enveloped in mist, and heard afterwards to my regret that the summit was clear, and that all the surrounding country lay exposed to view. The low, tangled jungle was too thick to admit of my seeing much. I climbed the strongest and highest trees there, but could only get glimpses of distant hills.

Thermometer during the night  $43^{\circ}$ , while in the cave yesterday it marked  $56^{\circ}$  at two o'clock.

Started early to commence our descent, collecting a few plants on our way; the first part of the walking is tolerably good—in fact, as far as the spot where we rested for breakfast on our ascent. It is in appearance

a series of mighty steps. . Passed on the wayside innumerable specimens of that curious pitcher-plant the *Nepenthes villosa*, with serrated lips.

After leaving the great steps, our course was along the edge of a ridge, where the path is extremely narrow; in fact, in two or three places not above eighteen inches wide—a foot of it serving as parapet, six inches of sloping rock forming the path. From one of these craggy spots a noble landscape is spread before us, eighty miles of coast-line, with all the intervening country visible at once. With one or two exceptions, plains skirt the sea-shore, then an undulating country, gradually rising to ranges varying from two to three thousand feet, with glimpses of silvery streams flowing among them. The waters of the Mengkabong and Sulaman, swelling to the proportions of lakes, add diversity to the scene.

It is fortunate that the ridge is not often so narrow as at these spots; for on one side there is a sheer descent of fifteen hundred feet, and on the other is very perpendicular ground, but wooded. Two decaying rocks which obstruct the path are also dangerous to pass, as we had to round them, with uncertain footing, and nothing but a bare crumbling surface to grasp. With the exception of these, the way is not difficult or tiring, until we leave the ridge and descend on the right towards the valleys: then it is steep, slippery, and very fatiguing, and it thus continues for several miles, until we have lowered the level nearly four thousand feet. The path, in fact, is as vile as path can be.

By the time I reached the hut where I had left



Mr. Low, I felt completely exhausted; but a little rest, a glass of brandy-and-water, and a bathe in the dashing torrent that foamed among the rocks at our feet, thoroughly restored me. The water here felt pleasant after the bitter cold of that near the cave. My companion had employed his time collecting plants, though his feet were not at all better.

Next morning we manufactured a kind of litter, on which Mr. Low was to be carried, and then started along a path skirting the banks of the Kalupis, the stream which flows beneath the village, and is, in fact, the source of the Tampasuk. We passed through several fields of tobacco, as well as of yams and kiladis; the first is so carefully cultivated, that not a weed was to be observed among the plants. Leaving the water, we pushed up the steep bank to the lower houses of the village, and made our way on to Lemoung's, which we reached just as a drenching shower came on.

Here we found one of our Baju guides, who had been sent back to construct rafts for the return voyage. I was not sorry to find that some had been prepared, as it appeared otherwise necessary that Mr. Low should be carried the whole way.

The villagers said they were at war even during the time we were at their houses with a neighbouring tribe, which induced them to bear arms wherever they might go; but the whole affair must have been very trifling, as they slept at their farms, and we saw, totally unprotected, troops of girls and women at work in the fields.

We thought it better to make some complaints of

the dishonesty shown before we ascended the mountain, they were profuse in apologies, but had evidently enjoyed the sausage.

We spent the afternoon and evening in settling all claims against us, and having completed that work, ordered the rest of our baggage to be packed up ready for an early start next morning. Among the undistributed goods was about twenty pounds weight of thick brass wire. While I was away bathing, Lemaing coolly walked off with it, but on my return Mr. Low informed me of what had occurred. Knowing that if we permitted this to pass unnoticed, it would be a signal for a general plunder, we determined to recover the wire. As Mr. Low could not move, I went by myself in search of Lemaing, and soon heard his voice speaking loudly in the centre of a dense crowd of the villagers. I forced my way through, and found him seated, with the brass wire in his hand, evidently pointing out its beauty to an admiring audience. I am afraid I very much disconcerted him, as with one hand I tore the prize from his grasp, and with the other put a revolver to his head, and told him to beware of meddling with our baggage. I never saw a look of greater astonishment; he tried to speak, but the words would not come, and the crowd opening, I bore back the trophy to our end of the village house.

The Bajus told us we should find the Ida'an of the plains dishonest, while those of the hills had the contrary reputation. We lost nothing in the plains, here we had to guard carefully against pilferers.

I noticed that as we gradually receded from the

sea, the clothing of the inhabitants became less—on the plains all the Ida'an wore trousers and jackets, at Koung and Kiau very few, and we were assured that those in the interior wore nothing but bark waist-cloths.

An incident occurred the evening before our departure, which showed how the Ida'an distrust each other. Among the goods we paid to our guides were twenty fathoms of thick brass wire; the coils were put down before them; they discussed the matter for two hours, but could not settle either the division, or who should take care of it until morning; at length one by one all retired and left the wire before us, the last man pushing it towards Musa, asking him to take charge of it. Not relishing this trust, he carried it to Li Moug's house, and placing it in the midst of the crowd, left it, after which they quarrelled over it till morning.

We thought that over night every claim had been settled, but in the morning they commenced again, anxious to prevent any goods leaving their village. We ourselves did not care to take back to our pinnace anything that was not necessary to enable us to pay our way. We made liberal offers to them if they would carry Mr. Low to the next village, but they positively refused to assist us farther. We therefore collected our Malays outside the place, and prepared to start, and were on the point of doing so, when shouts in the village house attracted our attention, and a man ran out to say that they were plundering the baggage left in charge of the Buñgol Ida'an. As this consisted of our clothes and cooking utensils, it was not to be

borne, and I ran back into the house, where I found a couple of hundred men surrounding our Ida'an followers and undoing the packages; they were startled by the sight of my rifle, and when they heard the rush caused by the advance of Mr. Low and our Malays, they fled to the end of the house, and soon disappeared through the opposite door. The panic seemed to cause the greatest amusement to the girls of this house, who talked and laughed, and patted us on the shoulders, and appeared to delight in the rapid flight of their countrymen. None of their own relatives, however, had joined in the affair.' .

Mr. Low's rapid advance to my support surprised me, but I found that with the assistance of a servant he had hopped the whole of the way, revolver in hand. Our men behaved with remarkable resolution, and would have driven off the whole village had it been necessary. One Malay got so excited, that he commenced a war-dance, and had we not instantly interfered, would have worked himself up to run amuck among the Ida'an. Though we wished to frighten them into honesty towards us, we were most anxious that not the slightest wound should be given, and I may here remark, that in none of our journeys have we ever found it necessary to use our weapons against the inhabitants. We discovered that showing ourselves prepared to fight if necessary, prevented its being ever necessary to fight.

• We pushed on to Koung by a path that led below Labang Labang, Mr. Low suffering severely from the necessity of having to walk six miles over stony country with suppurating feet.

At Koung we vainly endeavoured to obtain a buffalo on which he might ride, but the villagers showed no inclination to assist. So next morning we pushed on through heavy rain to the village of Tambatuan, where the Tampasuk becomes a little more fit for rafts. I was glad to see Mr. Low safely there, and then, as the rafts would not hold us all, I walked on with a few followers. The heavy rain had caused the river to swell, and the walking and the fording were doubly difficult, but we continued our course, and in two days reached the village of Ghinambur, where joining Mr. Low on the raft, I pursued my journey to the Bajau chief's house.

Next day to the Abai ; but contrary winds prevented our reaching Labuan for five days.

We were not quite satisfied with the results of this expedition, and determined shortly to start again, but by another route, the same followed by Mr. Low in 1851.

## CHAPTER IX.

## SECOND ASCENT OF KINA BALU.

IN June, 1858, the cholera which had been slowly advancing towards us from the south, suddenly burst upon Brunei with extreme violence, and laid the city in mourning. From day to day the deaths increased in number; every house flew white streamers, which showed cholera was there present; pious processions paraded the town, the mosques were crowded, all merriment at an end, though religious chants were heard from every boat; there was fear, but no panic, and the sick were cared for by their relations. The deaths were awfully sudden, one of my servants at work at five, was dead by eleven. My house was crowded by anxious parents seeking medicine, which was soon all distributed, and no one thought of business, attention being only given to this fearful scourge.

The Borneans ascribed the arrival of the cholera to a cause which illustrates their superstitions and their traditionary hatred and distrust of the Spaniards, with whom, in old times, they had constant feuds. It was reported that at dead of night a vessel was seen

ascending the river ; lights were burning in the cabins, and torches flashed upon the deck, which was crowded with armed Spaniards. On the vessel came, till she arrived at the long reach below the town, when the anchor was let go, but no noise was heard of falling weight or rattling chain : the seamen hurried up the rigging, the sails were clewed up, the yards made snug, yet not a sound was heard. The benighted fishermen hurried on, awe-stricken, and when in the morning they went to seek the vessel, it was gone, but on that day the cholera burst out with violence and desolated the city. The phantom ship was seen no more ; it had done its work, and had hurried away to spread mourning along the coast. The belief in the cholera apparition was not confined to the vulgar.

Mr. Low and I had determined to make another attempt to ascend Kina Balu in August, but fearing that if the cholera spread along the coast before we reached our point of debarkation, the Dusuns and Ida'an might prevent our passing through their villages, we resolved to anticipate the appointed time, and sailed from Labuan early in July, and in a few hours passed Tanjong Kubong, near the northern point of the island, where the best coal-seams are situated. The view from the sea is very picturesque : two hills, grass-covered, with the dark outlines of the forest in the rear, and a valley between, sloping upwards, showing, at one glance, the works of the coal company. On a bold rocky bluff is the manager's house, overlooking the open sea, with a clear view of the great mountain. It is to be regretted that there is no good anchorage in the north-east monsoon off

this point, as it necessitates a railway of seven miles being carried through the island to the splendid harbour, of Victoria. However, should this work be undertaken, it is very possible it may be the means of opening out the other veins which are known to exist in the centre of our colony. The coal-seams of Tanjong Kubong are perhaps as fine as any in the world, and it is probable that the failures in developing them have arisen from applying the same means of working as are used in England, forgetting that the fall of rain is four times as great. Labuan ought to supply all the farther East with coal, and may yet do so, under judicious management.

Passing on, we steered clear of the Pine shoals, and directed our course to Pulo Tiga, an island so called from the three undulating hills which form its surface. It is quite uninhabited, except occasionally by a few fishermen or traders, seeking water there. On its broad sandy beaches turtle are said to congregate, and here we have picked up some very pretty shells, particularly olives. The coast between Labuan and Nosong point, at the entrance of Kimanis Bay, consists of low hills, only partly cleared. At one place there are some bluff, red-looking points called Tanah Merah, or Red Land, and near it are many villages of Bisayas, who are engaged in planting pepper. Their gardens are said to be very neatly kept, and the system, which has descended to them from the former Chinese cultivators, is far superior to that pursued in Sumatra. There the Malays allow the vines to twine round the quick-growing Chingkariang tree, whose roots must necessarily absorb much of the nourish-



ment; but here they plant them in open ground, and train them up ironwood posts, thus preserving to them all the benefit of the manure they may apply to enrich the soil. Although the Bisayas are not careful cultivators, yet they prepare heaps of burnt earth and decaying weeds to place round the stems of the vines before they commence flowering.

Along this beach, herds of wild cattle are often seen wandering, particularly on bright moonlight nights, in search, most probably, of salt, which they are so fond of licking. All the natives declare that the species found here is smaller than those monsters I saw up the Limbang and Baram. It is very likely there may be two kinds.

A pleasant S.W. breeze carried us rapidly along the coast. Our craft, though not famous for its sailing qualities, ran well before the wind. It was a small yacht, belonging to the Eastern Archipelago Company, the same which we used when we went to Abai in the spring. Dr. Coultard had put himself to some inconvenience in lending it to us, as he was obliged to content himself with a native-built boat of mine, which was called by the ominous name of the "Coffin," and on one occasion nearly proved to be one to the obliging doctor. I myself had great faith in that boat, as it had taken me safely through many a heavy storm.

Rounding Nosong Point, we crossed the broad Bay of Kimanis, which here runs deep into the land, and receives the waters of numerous rivers. Just beyond the point is Qualla Lama, or the Old Mouth: entering which, a large boat can pass through an inner channel, and reach the mouth of the Kalias, opposite Labuan.

It is often used by the Malays to avoid the heavy sea, which, during the height of the south-west monsoon, breaks upon the coast. The shores of Kimanis Bay are rather low, yet have an interesting appearance, from the variety of tints to be observed among the vegetation.

There runs into this bay a pretty little river of the same name—Kimanis, from *kayu manis*, “sweetwood.” Its forests are famous for the large amount of cassia bark which used to be collected there, but which has now all been exhausted near the banks by the continued requisitions from the capital. This district is the appanage of one of the sons of the late Sultan, and he used every year to send up several trading prahus to be loaded with cassia,—paying to the aborigines tenpence for every 133 lbs., and selling the same amount for nine shillings. As long as the bark could be easily obtained from the trees near the banks of the river, the people were content to work for the low price, but as soon as it required a long walk from their villages, the Muruts declared the whole forest to be exhausted. I am assured, however, by trustworthy men, that ship-loads might be obtained, if the aborigines were offered fair prices, but the noble and his followers do their utmost to preserve a strict monopoly. And this is the case in most of the districts near the capital. Though they cannot themselves obtain much from the people, they have still sufficient influence to paralyze trade.

Kimanis, like most of the other rivers north of Labuan, is obstructed by a bar; in fact, though I could see its mouth from my boat, yet I could not

find the channel, till a Malay canoe led the way by coasting south about three hundred yards: then, pulling straight for the shore over the boiling surf, we soon found ourselves in the smooth river. The scenery, though not grand, is very lovely, and consists generally of the variety to be observed in the groves of cocoa-nuts and fruit-trees which line its banks, and the cultivated fields stretching inland. I always remember my visit to Kimanis with pleasure, as it was on turning a wooded point I had my first view of Kina Balu. A straight reach of the river stretched before us, overshadowed on either side by lofty trees, and the centre of the picture was the precipices and summit of the massive mountain.

On the left-hand bank is the grave of Pañgeran Usup, who, flying from the capital, met his death, under orders from the Government, at the hand of the chief of this river. I have heard the story told several ways, but the one which the head man of the village relates himself is a curious illustration of Bornean manners. The Pañgeran, flying from his enemies in the capital, came to Kimanis, which was one of his appanages, and asked its local chief whether he would protect him. The chief protested his loyalty, but, a few days after, receiving an order from the Government to seize and put his guest to death, made up his mind to execute it. He imparted the secret to three of his relations, whom he instructed to assist him. Pañgeran Usup was a dangerous man with whom to meddle, as he was accompanied by a devoted brother, who kept watch over him as he slept or bathed, and who received the same kind offices when

he desired to rest. For days the chief watched an opportunity—tending on his liege lord, holding his clothes, while he bathed, bringing his food, but never able to surprise him, as he or his brother was always watching with a drawn kris in his hand. The three relations sat continually on the mats near, in the most respectful attitude. The patience of the Malay would have carried him through a more difficult trial than this, as I think it was on the tenth day Pañgeran Usup, while standing on the wharf, watching his brother bathe, called for a light. The chief brought a large piece of firewood with very little burning charcoal on it, and the noble in vain endeavoured to light his cigar. At last, in his impatience, he put down his kris, and took the wood in his own hand. A fatal mistake! The treacherous friend immediately threw his arms round the Pañgeran, and the three watchers, springing up, soon secured the unarmed brother. Usup was immediately taken to the back of the house, and executed and buried on the hill, where his grave was pointed out to me.

We continued our voyage along the coast till about four in the afternoon, when heavy clouds rising in the south-west warned us that a squall was coming on. We, therefore, resolved to take shelter under the little islet of Dinaman, to the north of the Papar River. At first, we thought of taking shelter in its embouchure, as I had not yet seen this district, so famous for the extent and beauty of its cocoa-nut groves, and for the numerous population which has rendered the river's banks a succession of gardens.

Our anchorage protected us tolerably well from the

storm which now burst over us, but we rolled heavily as the swell of the sea came in. Drenching rain and furious blasts generally pass away quickly, as they did that evening, and left us to enjoy the quiet, star-light night.

We always endeavour to start on an expedition a few days before full moon, having a theory that the weather is then more likely to be fine than during the days which immediately follow a new moon.

Next morning we set sail for Gaya Bay, and in a few hours a light breeze carried us over a rippling sea to the deep entrance of this spacious harbour, in which all the navy of England could, in both monsoons, ride in safety. It is formed by numerous islands and an extended headland, which make it appear almost land-locked. The harbour is surrounded by low hills, some cleared at the top, presenting pretty green patches, others varied with bright tints, caused by exposed red sandstone; the rest covered with low thick jungle.

When I first visited this place, Pañgeran Madoud lived up the Kabatuan river, which flows into the bay, but had now removed to the shore, and established there a village called Gantisan. I had twice visited this Malay chief, and on both occasions had disagreeable news to impart to him, as I had to remonstrate against his system of taking goods from English traders and forgetting to pay when the price became due. The banks of the Kabatuan, except near the entrance, were entirely of mangrove-swamp, until we arrived within a short distance of the scattered village of Menggatal, but from our boat we could see the

sloping hills rising almost immediately behind the belt of mangrove.

The first buildings we saw were those in which the natives were making salt. I have already described the process pursued in the Abai, but here it was somewhat different, as they burnt the roots of the mangrove with those of the nipa palm, as well as wood collected on the sea-beach, and therefore impregnated with salt. In one place I noticed a heap, perhaps fifteen feet in height, sheltered by a rough covering of palm-leaves, and several men were about checking all attempts of the flames to burst through by throwing salt-water over the pile. This, doubtless, renders the process much more productive. In one very large shed they had a kind of rough furnace, where they burnt the wood; and suspended around were many baskets in which the remains of the fire are placed, and the whole then soaked in water and stirred about till the salt is supposed to have been extracted from the charcoal and ashes. The liquid is then boiled, as at Abai, in large iron pans purchased from the Chinese.

The village of Menggatal contained about a hundred houses scattered among the trees, and in the centre was the residence of the chief, tolerably well built of thick posts and plank walls. We found chairs and tables had already penetrated to this secluded spot, and the Pañgeran was not a little proud of being able to receive us in European fashion. He was at the period of our first visit about forty, tall, and with rather a pleasant, quiet countenance; but having little strength of character, was willing to enter into intercourse with the pirates, if by so doing he could gain

anything. He had, in fact, just purchased from them a trading prahu, which they had captured north of Labuan, after having killed two of the Bornean crew, who were his own countrymen. Like all the other chiefs, he attempts to monopolize the trade of his district, and thus reduces it to a minimum.

While we were conversing, there came in a party of the Ida'an, whose young chief, broad-shouldered, with his waist drawn in as tightly as he could, had a very intelligent countenance; over his breast he wore strings of cowrie shells, round his loins neatly-worked rattan rings, and on his neck a broad brass collar open at the side, enabling him to take it off with ease. Their baskets were filled with tobacco for the noble, who is said subsequently to have so oppressed the neighbouring villages of Ida'an, that they threatened to assail him, and being rather timid, he and his people retired before the storm. Building their houses at Gantisan, in Gaya Bay, on freshly cleared jungle, the Malays suffered severely from fever; the whole population is said to have been attacked, of whom many died.

We found anchored at Lokporin, in the north-west part of the bay, a Spanish brig, belonging to Monsieur Cuarteron, the Prefect Apostolic of the newly-arrived Roman Catholic mission. He had built a hut and a chapel of palm stems and leaves, as a commencement of what he hoped would be a prosperous mission; but he had his attention too much directed to temporal, to take proper care of spiritual affairs.\*

We paid a visit to the Bornean chief of Gantisan,

A short account of this mission will be found at the end of the second volume.

settled to leave our pinrace under his care, and start next morning, as the cholera had already invaded this place, and eight deaths were reported.

Having distributed the luggage among our followers, we landed on the northern shore of the bay and walked over a low ridge to the waters of the Mengkabong ; from the summit we had a good view of this extensive salt lake, filled with islands, and on the inland side bordered by hills. At the landing-place we met the nominal ruler of Mengkabong, Pañgeran Duroup, who had kindly provided canoes to take us to the point where our walking journey would commence. We stopped to breakfast at his house, and Monsieur Cuarteron, who was with us, pointed out an intelligent lad, the son of Duroup, whom he intended to raise to power over the surrounding countries, and be himself the boy's Prime Minister.

A Spaniard has many temptations to intrigue in these districts, as there are here numerous inhabitants of the Philippines, originally captured by the Lanun and Balignini pirates, and sold into slavery. They have married and intermarried with the inhabitants, and forming a part of the regular population, are most unwilling to leave the country. Some have risen to respectable positions, and nearly all have joined the Mohamedan religion. Still, having formerly been Christians, they have some respect but more fear of the Spanish priests, and are much open to their secular influence, though very few will re-enter the Roman Church. As might be expected, the priest's political intrigues did no good, but, instead, diffused suspicion and dislike among the natives.



We started again in boats after breakfast, and passed the entrance from the sea, pulled through the water-lanes of the chief town, and by the numerous villages scattered about. Nearly all the houses were built on the water. We estimated the population at above 6,000. A glance at the accompanying map will explain the kind of place Mengkabong is, but I may observe that this salt-water creek or lake is very shallow, in many places dry, or but a few inches deep at dead low-water, so that it seems to be rapidly filling up, and all the plains skirting the sea had probably a similar origin. To the south and south-east it is surrounded by hills, none of which exceed eight hundred feet in height.

Mengkabong is the head-quarters of the Bajus on the north-western coast of Borneo, and being the only population to be found in the villages scattered over the lake, they are more tempted to pursue their old marauding habits than those of the northern rivers, who have the Lanuns between them and the sea. They are bold seamen, and will venture anywhere in search of wealth. When the British ship, *Fiery Cross*, was wrecked on a shoal far out in the China Seas, the captain and crew made for our colony of Labuan. The news soon spread along the coast that a ship with a valuable cargo was on shore, and a small squadron of native prahus was immediately fitted out at Mengkabong to look for her. They boldly put forth to sea, visiting all the reefs with which they were acquainted, and even pushing their researches so far as to sight the coast of Cochin China, known to the Malays under the name of Annam. Their exertions were for them

unfortunately unavailing, but they often pick up a prize, as when a Bombay cotton ship was wrecked at Meñgalong, an island off the coast; and during the last China war, they found a large French vessel deserted on a reef to the north of Borneo, but which, to their infinite disgust, proved to have only a cargo of coals. The Baju prahus may generally be known by their tripod masts, which consist of three tall bamboos, the two foremost fitted on a cross beam, the last loose; so that when a heavy squall threatens, they can immediately strike their mast.

The Bajus of Mengkabong are, as I have said, a very lawless people, and the following anecdote, told me by Signor Cuarteron, will assist to prove it. He was anchored opposite his chapel in Lokporin, when he heard that there was fighting in Mengkabong, and, on inquiry, found that a boat, returning from Labuan to Cagayan Sulu, had put into that place for water, and was being attacked by the Bajus. He instantly manned and armed his boats and pulled round to the salt-water lake. On arriving near the first village, he saw several hundred men assembled in prahus, round a detached house, near which a trading-vessel was fastened, and guns were occasionally discharged. He inquired the reason, and the Bajus declared they were going to revenge the death or captivity of some of their countrymen who had disappeared a few months before, and whom, they had heard, people from Cagayan Sulu had attacked. It was immaterial to them whether these were the guilty parties or not, if they came from the same country.

Signor Cuarteron then pulled up to the detached

house, to learn from its beleaguered inmates who they were. He soon discovered they were peaceful traders, not concerned in the outrage of the spring; upon which, by dint of threats and persuasion, he was enabled to rescue them from the Bajus, and to escort them to the mouth of the Mengkabong—a very creditable action. The lawlessness of the Bajus is notorious, and they are now seldom employed, since the murder of some Chinese traders, who trusted them to form the crew of their boat.

Pañgeran Duroup, the nominal ruler of this place, always kept aloof from such things, as the Bajus despised any order he gave; in fact, their open defiance of his authority had induced him to remove from the chief town to a little island nearly facing the mouth of the river, whose low land was formed of mud on a bed of water-worn pebbles.

I have noticed, in my account of our first expedition to Kina Balu, how mixed in breed were many of the Bajus with whom we conversed, but, although there is occasionally some Chinese blood found among them, yet it has rarely left a trace on their features. They appear to me to be very much like the Orang Laut, who frequent the small islands to the south of Singapore and about the Malay peninsula; they are generally, however, smaller, and their voices have a sharper intonation than that of the Malays.

I think that the bold spirit shown by these men, their love of the seas, and their courage, might be turned to good account under a steady government.

Leaving the lake we pushed up a narrow creek to a house inhabited by Pañgeran Sirail, a Bornean noble,

who politely requested us to spend the night with him, adding that in the morning a bazaar would be held close at hand, where we should meet all the inhabitants of the Tawaran; among others the chief of the village of Tamparuli, who escorted Mr. Low in his journey undertaken in 1851. We were happy to accede to his request, and finding his house very comfortable, took up our quarters in a charming little audience hall or smoking-room which extended in front, and was neat and clean.

Our baggage being heavy, we hired some Bajus to assist our men, and then lighting our lamps, sat down to dinner. Our host, while declaring that his religion prevented him joining in a glass of whiskey and water, was suddenly seized with such severe spasms in the stomach as to require medicine; we unsmilingly administered a glass of warm whiskey and water, which our host drank with evident gusto, but it required a second to complete the cure. As the evening advanced, and his utterance became more indistinct, he kept assuring us that a Mohamedan should never drink spirits except when taken as medicine.

We were sorry to find that the cholera had already reached Mengkabong, and that several deaths had taken place. In the night we were disturbed by piercing shrieks and mournful wails from a neighbouring house; we thought it was another victim of the epidemic, but it proved to be a young girl sorrowing for the loss of a sister, who died in the night from abscess.

Early in the morning the market-people began to assemble, and Bajus and Dusuns crowded round the

house ; the former brought salt, salted fish, iron, and cloth, to exchange with the latter for rice, tobacco, vegetables, and fruit. These markets are very convenient, and, as at Brunci, are held daily at different points, in order to accommodate the various villages scattered around the lake. To-day there was a very great gathering, as many disputes had to be settled.

The old chief of Tamparuli came, and at first appeared uninterested and scarcely noticed us, his eye-sight was weak, and he appeared dull and stupid. A glass of whiskey and water revived his energies and his recollection, he shook Mr. Low warmly by the hand, and then turning to the assembly told them in an excited voice of the wonderful feats he had performed in the old journey, and how he had actually reached the summit of Kina Balu.

This fired the ambition of Sirail, who, as long as he was under the influence of whiskey, declared it would be dishonour to allow the white men to do this difficult task alone, and pointing to the craggy summits now clearly visible above the trees, swore he would reach them, but his courage soon oozed out at his fingers' ends. The chief, however, considered himself as too old again to attempt the journey, but said he would send his son-in-law and a party of followers.

When the market was over we started, most of our baggage being placed on light bamboo sledges drawn by buffaloes, which appeared to pass over the soft soil with great ease. The path, nearly due east, lay across a pretty plain for the most part under cultivation ; men were ploughing, harrowing, and sowing in various fields, carefully divided into small squares with slight

embankments between them. The ploughing was better than at Tampasuk, deeper, and the ground more turned over; each section of these fields is as much private property as any in England, and in general so much valued as to be rarely parted with.

In crossing this cultivated plain, just before reaching the Tawaran river, we had the finest view of Kina Balu that could be imagined; we were standing where the young rice was showing its tender green above the ground: on either side were groves of tall palms, and in front, the hills rose in successive ranges till Kina Balu crowned the whole. Its purple precipices were distinctly visible, and broad streams of water, flashing in the bright morning sun, were flowing down the upper slopes to disappear in mist or deep ravines, or to be lost in the shadows of the great mountain.

About three miles walking brought us to the Tawaran, whose banks were lined with groves of cocoa-nut and other fruit-trees; interspersed among which were villages and detached houses. We observed also a plantation of sago palms, which the inhabitants said were plentiful, but certainly not in the parts we had traversed.

There were also gardens here as neatly fenced in and as carefully tended as those of the Chinese; and this rich soil produces in great perfection sugar-cane, Indian corn, yams, kiladis, and other vegetables. The whole had a very civilized appearance, the neatness was remarkable, and about the houses were cattle, buffaloes, and goats, in great numbers. On reaching the Tawaran, Monsieur Cuarteron left us to visit a

Manilla man, who, though formerly a captive sold into slavery, had now become the chief of a village.

We continued our course inland along the banks of the Tawaran until we reached Tamparuli, prettily embowered in extensive groves of fruit-trees: here our quarters for the night were at the old chief's house, very similar in appearance to those of the Sea Dayaks.

The Tawaran, where we first joined it, was about sixty yards broad, rapid, swollen by the late rains, and muddy from recent landslips. It is a river very unimportant in itself, as here, not perhaps ten miles from the sea, there are already rapids which can only be passed by very small native craft.

The old chief of Tamparuli is the proud possessor of the famed sacred jar I have already referred to. It was a Gusi, and was originally given by a Malau chief in the interior of the Kapuas to a Pakatan Dayak, converted, however, to Islam, and named Japar. He sold it for nearly two tons of brass guns, or 230*l.*, to a Bornean trader, who brought it to the Tawaran to resell it, nominally for 400*l.*, really for nearly 700*l.* No money passes on these occasions, it is all reckoned in brass guns or produce, and the old chief was paying for his in rice. He possesses another jar, however, to which he attaches an almost fabulous value; it is about two feet in height, and of a dark olive green. He fills both the jars with water, and adds flowers and herbs to retail to all the surrounding people who may be suffering from any illness, so that he had probably received in fees more than the original price of the jars. The night we were there they little thought that a scourge was coming upon them which

would test to the utmost the virtue of the sacred vessels.

Perhaps, however, the most remarkable jar in Borneo, is the one possessed by the present Sultan of Brunei, as it not only has all the valuable properties of the other sacred vases, but speaks. As the Sultan told us this with a grave face and evident belief in the truth of what he was relating, we listened to the story with great interest. He said, the night before his first wife died, the jar moaned sorrowfully, and on every occasion of impending misfortune utters the same melancholy sounds. I have sufficient faith in his word to endeavour to seek an explanation of this remarkable phenomenon, and perhaps it may arise from the wind blowing over its mouth, which may be of some peculiar shape, and causing sounds like those of an Æolian harp. I should have asked to see it, had it not been always kept in the women's apartments.

As a rule, the jar is covered over with gold-embroidered brocade, and seldom exposed, except when about to be consulted. This may account for its only producing sounds at certain times. I have heard, that in former days, the aborigines used to come with presents to the Sultan, and obtain in return a little water from this sacred jar, with which to besprinkle their fields to ensure good crops. I have not known an instance of their doing so during late years, as the relations between monarch and people are now of the most unsatisfactory kind.

In looking over Carletti's *Voyage*, I find he mentions taking (in the seventeenth century) some sacred jars from the Philippine Islands to Japan, which were



so prized there, that the punishment of death was denounced against those who should sell them to any but the Government. Some, he says, were valued as high as 30,000*l*. The Sultan of Brunei was asked if he would take 2,000*l*. for his ; he answered he did not think any offer in the world would tempt him to part with it.

The chief possessed a daughter, the loveliest girl in Borneo. I have never seen a native surpass her in figure, or equal her gentle, expressive countenance. She appeared but sixteen years of age, and as she stood near, leaning against the door-post in the most graceful attitude, we had a perfect view of all her perfections. Her dress was slight indeed, consisting of nothing but a short petticoat reaching from her waist to a little above her knees. Her skin was of that light clear brown which is almost the perfection of colour in a sunny clime, and as she was just returning from bathing, her hair unbound fell in great luxuriance over her shoulders. Her eyes were black, not flashing, but rather contemplative, and her features were regular, even her nose was straight.

So intent was she in watching our movements, and wondering at our novel mode of eating, with spoons, and knives and forks, that she unconsciously remained in her graceful attitude for some time ; but suddenly recollecting that she was not appearing to the best advantage in her light costume, she moved away slowly to her room, and presently came forth dressed in a silk jacket and new petticoat, with bead necklaces and gold ornaments. In our eyes she did not look so interesting as before.

The spirit-loving noble now approached us to say that he felt he was too old and weak to ascend the great mountain, but had brought three of his people to supply his place. We were not sorry, as his devotion to whiskey would have sadly reduced our small stock. Although it was but three months' after the harvest, yet we could obtain no supplies of rice; they had it in the form of padi, but were unwilling to part with any, so we sent back some of our followers to procure sufficient for a few days.

Next morning we made but little progress, having to wait for the men who had gone in search of rice. However, we reached the village of Bawang, our path lying among the fruit groves which skirted the river's banks. As it was now unfordable, we had to cross by a boat, and this with our large party was a slow process.

Bawang consists of scattered dwellings, like those of the Malays, while the other villages we have seen resemble those of the Sea Dayaks. A family very hospitably received us, and gave up half their house for the accommodation of our party. The chief who had accompanied us to this place now returned, handing us over to Kadum, his son-in-law, a very dull-looking man; we were also joined by ten others. One, a Malay named Omar, who was to act as interpreter and guide, was a willing but stupid fellow, who came originally from the Dutch settlement of Pontianak, and had been married five years to a Dusun girl, yet he could scarcely manage to act as interpreter, not perhaps so much from ignorance, as from a confusion of ideas.

Started soon after six for a cleared spot about a quarter of a mile above the village, where we stopped to introduce some order among our followers: we divided the packages, and found each of the forty-one men had sufficient to carry.

About two or three miles above Bawang the Tawaran divides—one branch running from the south, the other from the S.E. by E. We soon reached the foot of the sandstone range, bounding the low land, and like all heights composed of this rock, it was very steep to climb. For a thousand feet it was abrupt, and severe work to those unused to such toil. The path then led us along the top of the ridge to a peak about 1,500 feet high, from which I was enabled to take compass bearings. A fine view was to be had a few feet from the summit, the coast line being quite clear from Gaya Bay to Sulaman Lake, Mengalong, and other distant isles scattered on the sea were distinctly visible. A wide plain stretches below us, mostly rice-fields, with groves of fruit-trees interspersed among them, and the extensive Mengkabong waters form a pleasing feature in the scene.

We continued our course to the village of Si Nilau, passing over a hill of a similar name, about 1,800 feet high. The village, if village it can be called, where a number of little detached hamlets are scattered about the slopes of the hills, amid groves of palms, is a good resting-place. We brought up here to give time for our followers to join us, as they felt the climbing more than we did, who carried nothing but our weapons. We were three hours, exclusive of stoppages, advancing four miles of direct course E. by S. Most of the

ranges run nearly E. and W., though occasionally there is some divergence.

After breakfasting, we started, hoping to reach the next village of Kalawat, but our guide making a mistake, led us in a totally wrong direction, so that after wandering about two hours in a scorching sun without shelter, we returned to Si Nilau.

Heavy masses of clouds were now driving over the sky, threatening a deluge of rain, so we determined to spend the night here, and told our guide that we would distribute our men among the houses. Omar presently returned, saying the villagers refused us entrance into their dwellings. As heavy drops now began to fall, I went down from the fruit grove, where our party was assembled, and approaching a house which appeared the neatest and the cleanest, found the door shut. There were evidently people inside, while all the other houses were empty. It is an universal custom in Borneo to afford shelter to travellers, but they very rarely like to enter houses whose owners are absent.

Hearing some whispering going on inside, I knocked and directed the interpreter to ask for shelter; there was no answer, and as the heavy drops were coming down faster, I gave a vigorous push to the door. The fastening gave way, and an old woman fell back among a crowd of frightened girls, who, at the sight of a white man, shrieked and sprang out through an opposite window. They did not run far, but turned to observe if they were followed. I went to the window, and smilingly beckoned them to come back, and as the rain was now beginning to descend with violence, they did so. We apologized for our rough entry, but the

high wind that drove sheets of water against the house was our best excuse. We promised to pay for our accommodation, and in five minutes they were all busily engaged in their usual avocations. On the return of the men from their farms, we told them what had occurred, at which they laughed heartily as soon as they found we were not offended by having had the door shut in our faces, and we then made many inquiries concerning the lake of Kina Balu, and whether either branch of the Tawaran ran from it; but all the villagers were positive that the river had its sources in the hills, which we could see farther east. Of the lake itself they had never heard.

The Nilau tribe is very scattered, none of the hamlets containing above a dozen small houses; but in personal appearance Mr. Low found the villages much improved since he saw them in 1851. It is impossible to do more than guess at the population, but judging from the cleared appearance of the country, it must be tolerably numerous. There is little old forest, except on the summit of the highest ridges, all the land being used in succession. Rice, however, is the principal cultivation, there being few root crops, and we observed no tobacco plantations.

The girls of this village wore black cloths over their bosoms, with the ends thrown across their shoulders.

Started early for Kalawat in an E. by S. direction. A sharp ascent led us to the top of the heights of Tangkahang, from which we had a very extensive view, reaching from Mengkabong to Pandasan. Ranges of hills, nearly parallel to our walk, occurred on either side, with feeders of the Tawaran at their feet. After

an hour's walk, reached the Kalawat hills, nearly 3,000 feet high. The path passed, after a few hundred yards, to the south of the range, perhaps 200 feet from its summit, and in about a mile turned to the S.E. Then the walk became very tiring, up and down the steepest of ravines, with slippery clay steps or loose stones. I was not sorry, therefore, to reach the village of Kalawat, a cluster of about ten long houses, containing upwards of eighty families. The village was dirty and so were the people.

We stopped here to breakfast, and to wait the arrival of our straggling followers, and heard of the desertion of one of them. He was a negro, of great size and power, and, in muscular development, equal to two or three of our other men. Our overseer had chosen him to carry our edibles, as tea, sugar, salt, and curry stuffs, but had unfortunately trusted him also with half a bottle of whiskey. He had complained bitterly of the exhausting nature of the walk, and no sooner were our backs turned than he slipped into the brushwood, and devoted himself to the bottle; he was found there by the overseer, who, after extracting a promise that he would follow when sober, left him with all our condiments. These very heavy muscular men generally prove useless in jungle work. In all our arrangements we now greatly missed Musa, my head boatman, who had stayed behind at Brunei, to look after his family during the cholera.

. Starting again, a very trying climb took us to the top of a hill, from which a long but easy descent led to the Tinuman, a feeder of the Tawaran. We observed, both yesterday and to-day, many villages

scattered over the face of the country, as Tagau, Bangau, and others. Though there was no plain at the foot of the hills, yet many of the slopes were easy, occasionally almost flat.

At the little stream of Tinuman, we came upon a party of men, belonging to the village of Buñgol, who led us by a very winding path to their houses, situated on the left-hand bank of the Tawaran. We had scarcely reached it when rain came on, as it appears generally to do about three o'clock in the afternoon in the neighbourhood of Kina Balu and other lofty mountains.

Buñgol is a large village, and contained, in 1851, according to their own account, about 120 families; but this time (1858), they appeared uncertain how many there were. I estimated, from the length of the different houses, that there were above 160 families. It is situated on grassy, undulating land, about fifty or sixty feet above the level of the stream; yet the inhabitants are exposed to floods, that reach their houses and damage the crops on the low lands.

In our first expedition up the Tampasuk, we rested at some houses of the Buñgol Ida'an, but could discover no more connection between these communities of the same name than between the others. Notwithstanding the pouring rain, we walked through the village, and bathed beneath the houses in the rushing torrent, the Tawaran now deserves no other name.

Next morning, Omar, the guide, came to say that all the bridges of the regular path had been washed away, and that it would be necessary to take us by another, with which he was unacquainted. We sus-

pected that this announcement was merely to serve a friend who was hired as guide, but gave way to their assurances that the old path was impassable, and had reason to repent it, as, instead of taking us by the direct route, only four miles in an east direction, he led us first north, then north-east, ending in east-north-east, and after leading us during eight hours over numerous pathless ranges, at last brought us to the Tampasuk, about three miles below the village of Koung, where we stopped on our former journey. The dividing ranges are very much broken up, and run in all directions. A tributary of the Tawaran, to the north, came within a mile of the Tampasuk, running direct towards Sulaman, and then turning to the eastward.

We had beautiful views to-day of the surrounding country, both towards the sea and towards the mountains; but had scarcely reached the Tampasuk, when heavy rain came on, totally obscuring the prospect, and although we pushed on resolutely for an hour, fording the swelling stream, and climbing the slippery banks, were at last obliged to stop at a hut amid a field of kiladis, and give up our intention of reaching Koung.

We thought ourselves completely exhausted, until we saw the bungling attempts of our men to set up the tents. The Malays were very tired, and were shivering in the drenching rain and cold wind which swept down from the mountains, so we determined before taking off our wet clothes to see our men comfortable. Under our directions, and with our active assistance, the tents were soon raised, as the men, encouraged by our example, worked vigorously. But



it was a fatiguing day,—nine hours of continued climbing and descending.

On the following morning we proceeded to Koug. There were few farms in sight, though yesterday we saw immense clearings, some extending over a whole hill-side, and all working hard to increase them.

On reaching Koug, we found the villagers assembled, and crowds occupying the chief's house. We had intended, if possible, to reach the summit of Kina Balu from this village, as on the last occasion we were disgusted with the conduct of the Kiau people, but soon ascertained that it was not possible, as the western spurs did not reach above half way up the mountain side, nor was there any rice to be procured. We were also very much astonished to hear the kind old chief asking for black-mail; it did not appear to come from his heart, so we looked round to find who was his prompter, and, at the first glance, discovered the ugly face of Timbañgan, a wall-eyed man—the very chief who had tried to prevent our passing through Labang Labang, in the spring.

To give way would have been absurd, as we should have had black-mail demanded of us at every village, and increasing in a progressive ratio. So we called up all the interpreters and made them carefully explain what were our motives in travelling and the objects we had in view; that we would pay for everything we required, or for any damage done by our followers, but not for permission to travel through their country. We then reminded them how their great enemies, the Lanuns of Tampasuk and Pandasan, had been defeated by the English, and how impossible

it would be for the Ida'an to fight with white men. A revolver was then discharged through a thick plank, to show the effect of that small instrument, and how useless a defence their shields would prove, and I handed the chief my heavy double-barrelled rifle to examine, that he might reflect on its great power.

The effect of the explanations and of the conical balls was immediate, we heard no more of black-mail, on the contrary, the most friendly relations were established. To show what a curious people they are, and how we appeared to have hit the hidden springs of their actions, I may mention that we now felt the utmost confidence in them, and asked the chief to take care of a fever-stricken servant, and of all such portions of our baggage as we did not wish to carry on with us. He cheerfully agreed to do all we wished, and proved most friendly and useful. We then made presents to his wife to a greater extent than his demand for black-mail, trying to convince them by our actions that the better they behaved to us, the more kindly and liberally we should behave to them.

Next morning we started for Kiau. We noticed, the previous day, that Timbaŋgan had disappeared immediately after the pistol was discharged, which was a demonstration especially intended for him, and one of our guides told us he was about to collect his tribe to dispute our farther passage, and advised us to make a detour round his village; but, if hostilities were intended, it was better to face them, as, by the lower path, we might easily have been surprised at a ford or in some deep ravine. At the foot of the hill we halted till all our force was collected, and then marched up to

the village. To our great surprise, we found it deserted by all except Timbaŋgan, who offered his services as a guide; though we knew the way as well as he did, we cheerfully accepted his aid, and well rewarded it.

We followed the same path as during our last expedition, and reached Kiau without difficulty, to find all our old acquaintances merry-making at a wedding. We were rather anxious about our reception, after the lively scene that had closed our last visit, and had determined to put ourselves in the hands of the old man, Li Moung, as we had been very dissatisfied with the conduct of Li Maing, our former guide. We entered the almost deserted house we had formerly occupied, but were soon surrounded by the wedding guests, who came flocking down to meet us, and welcomed us in the most friendly and hearty manner. And these were the very men with whom, on our last visit, we were apparently about to exchange blows. I say apparently, because I do not believe they ever really intended to fight. They had been accustomed to parties of Bajus traders arriving at their village, whom they could frighten into compliance with their demands, and thought they might do the same with us; but finding from their former experience they could not, they did not attempt it this time, and we ourselves placed the fullest confidence in them. The Bajus, however, now seldom visit these distant villagers, who are thus compelled to take their own produce to the coast, to be cajoled or plundered in their turn, which is one of the reasons why cloth and iron are so rare among them.

Li Moung was delighted with our determination to leave all arrangements in his hands, and Li Maing was not very much dissatisfied, as a huge boil almost prevented his walking. We made our beds under a large window which opened from the public room, as the only spot where fresh air could be obtained. This house was better arranged than the ordinary Sea Dayak ones. Instead of having the whole floor on a level with the door, they had a long passage leading through the house: on one side the private apartments; on the other, a raised platform on which the lads and unmarried men slept. We found this very comfortable, as the dogs were not permitted to wander over it.

The wedding guests were very excited, having drunk sufficient to loosen their tongues; the men were talkative, while the women pressed in crowds round the foot of our mats. The great difficulty was, as usual—no rice to be had.

Next day we sent our men through the village to find if it were possible to procure provisions, but they only obtained sufficient for a day's consumption. This determined us to send back to our pinnace all but six of our followers to procure supplies. We told the Ida'an of our resolve, and I think this proof of our confidence had a great effect on them; in fact, we always treated them in the same way, whether we were backed by a large force or not, and never had to repent of our conduct towards them.

## CHAPTER X.

SECOND ASCENT OF KINA BALU—*Continued.*

KADUM and the men of Tamparuli, together with the overseer and most of our followers, started on their journey, while we devoted our leisure to collecting vocabularies, and trying to make ourselves understood by the people. They showed great readiness to assist us, particularly the girls, who made us repeat sentences after them, and then burst into loud laughter either at our pronunciation or the comical things they had taught us.

All the lads of the village were rejoiced at our arrival, as we purchased the plants they brought in, particularly those with variegated leaves, and they thus obtained brass wire and cloth. One evening, a man, who had been visiting another village, produced from his basket specimens of two new kinds of nepenthes, which were wondrous to behold, so we determined to make a visit to the spot where he found them.

As the man assured us it would be a very long walk, we provided ourselves with blankets, to enable us, if necessary, to sleep out a night. We passed over a hill at the back of the village, which, where the

path crosses it, is about five hundred feet above the houses, and is a continuation of a spur of Kina Balu. We then descended into a ravine, and, passing over a subspur, had a fine view of a valley about three miles broad. A stream ran on either side, and between was a fine space almost flat, at the lower end of which stood the village of Pinokok. Having descended and crossed two streams called Haya Haya, which soon joined, however, into one to form the Pinokok, we traversed the plain, and rested on the banks of the Dahombang, or Hobang stream, to breakfast on sweet potatoes and sardines, the worst things that can be imagined for a morning meal. Crossing the Hobang, a steep climb led us to the western spur, along which our path lay; here, at about 4,000 feet, Mr. Low found a beautiful white and spotted pitcher-plant, which he considered the prettiest of the twenty-two species of nepenthes with which he was then acquainted: the pitchers are white and covered in the most beautiful manner with spots of an irregular form, of a rosy pink colour. On each leaf is a row of very soft downy hairs, running along its edge, and a similar brown pubescence grows on the cups. It is a climbing plant, and varies from fifteen to twenty feet in length. Its leaves are about nine inches long in the blade, and have winged petioles which are carried down the stem to the next leaf below, each of which bears a pitcher on a prolonged petiole about fifteen inches in length.

• We continued our walk along the ridge until we had reached an elevation of 4,500 feet, when the path descended to the pleasant stream, or rather torrent, of Kina Taki, in which greenstone was the principal rock.

All the rivulets we have passed to-day fall into the Dahombang, which continues its course until, winding round the bluff point of Labang Labang, it joins the Tampasuk. Another steep climb of 800 feet brought us to the Marei Parei spur, to the spot where the ground was covered with the magnificent pitcher-plants, of which we had come in search. This one has been called the *Nepenthes Rajah*, and is a plant about four feet in length, with broad leaves stretching on every side, having the great pitchers resting on the ground in a circle about it. Their shape and size are remarkable. I will give the measurement of one, to indicate the form : the length along the back nearly fourteen inches ; from the base to the top of the column in front, five inches ; and its lid a foot long by fourteen inches broad, and of an oval shape. Its mouth was surrounded by a plaited pile, which near the column was two inches broad, lessening in its narrowest part to three-quarters of an inch. The plaited pile of the mouth was also undulating in broad waves. Near the stem the pitcher is four inches deep, so that the mouth is situated upon it in a triangular manner. The colour of an old chalice is a deep purple, but that of the others is generally mauve outside, very dark indeed in the lower part, though lighter towards the rim ; the inside is of the same colour, but has a kind of glazed and shiny appearance. The lid is mauve in the centre, shading to green at the edges. The stems of the female flowers we found always a foot shorter than those of the male, and the former were far less numerous than the latter. It is indeed one of the most astonishing productions of nature..







Mr. Low set to work enthusiastically to collect specimens, while I tried to procure some compass bearings; but the mist kept driving over the country, so that I had only one good opportunity. I rested the compass on a rock, and was surprised by its pointing in a very different direction from what the position of the sun showed it should. On raising it in my hands, it pointed correctly. I found, on examination, that the rock was covered with a thick coating of iron, and all in the neighbourhood were in a similar state. To-day we reached an elevation of 5,400 feet. The path we followed was tolerably good; we were told that it led to the village of Sayap, a branch of the Kiau tribe.

The sandstone near the mountain is almost perpendicular, being at an angle of  $80^{\circ}$ , which lower down the sides lessens. It appears as if the molten granite had been forced up through the sandstone. Along the sides of the spurs were huge boulders of granite, left, doubtless, by the streams ere they cut their way deeper in the earth. Mr. Low having finished collecting, we returned, and during the walk were continually regaled with the rich perfume of the flowers of the magnolia, but could not find one of them, though the plants were numerous. After a tiring descent, we reached the plain about five, and made preparations to pass the night at a hut belonging to Li Moun, in the valley of Pinokok.

We never had a finer view of Kina Balu than this evening. A white cloud, in the form of a turban, its edges richly fringed with gold, encompassed most of the highest peaks, while the brightness of the set-

ting sun rendered every other portion of the mountain distinctly visible, except those dark valleys cut deep in its sides, where the Dahombang and the Pinokok have their rise ; and even here a succession of cascades reflected back the sun's rays from the shadowy gloom.

We were standing opposite its western face, and having no high buttress between us and the mountain, could observe the great precipice, which is here nearly perpendicular from the sloping summit down to an elevation of about 5,000 feet. As we stood there admiring the extreme beauty of the scene, a double rainbow began to appear, and apparently arching over the mountain, formed, as it were, a bright framework to the picture. We stayed there until the sun setting beyond the distant hills threw the valley into shade, but left its brightness on the craggy peaks above. Gradually the wind rose and drove the clouds over the heavens, and the form of the mountain and the brilliant rainbows vanished.

The land in this valley is of the richest description—far superior, Mr. Low thought, to that used in Ceylon for coffee plantations. The hut where we stayed the night was 3,000 feet above the level of the sea, and the hills around about 4,000 feet.

Next morning we returned to the houses by the same path, and rested on the summit of the hill overlooking the village. Here we sat for some time making inquiries about the great lake. The natives speak of it as undoubtedly existing, saying we could reach it in three days. One who had traded with the villages on its banks asserted that standing on the beach, he could not see the opposite side. The first

village on the road is Tuhan, and the next Inserban : they all call the lake Ranau, a corruption of the Malay Danau. We could scarcely make any connected inquiries, on account of the indifference or stupidity of our interpreter ; but seriously discussing the possibility of our being able to combine the two journeys, found our means insufficient. With our party we should have taken a long time, particularly as the villagers refused to furnish us with guides until their rice-planting should be over.

We noticed the great change that had taken place in the ways and tastes of these people. When Mr. Low was here in 1851, beads and brass wire were very much sought after. When we came last April, the people cared nothing for beads, and very little for cloth, their hearts being set on brass wire. We, however, distributed a good deal of cloth, at reasonable rates, in exchange for food and services rendered. We now found that even brass wire, except of a very large size, was despised, and cloth eagerly desired. Chawats were decreasing, and trousers coming in. This is a taste likely to continue, as the weather at Kiau is generally cool, and it might also stimulate their industry. At present, although they keep their plantations very clean, they use no instrument to turn up the soil, merely putting the seed in a hole made with a pointed stick. In size, their kiladis, sweet potatoes, and rice are very inferior and their crops scanty, though the flavour of their productions is excellent, but with their tobacco they appear to take much pains. Thinking that potatoes might flourish here, Mr. Low, in 1856, sent some by Mr. Lobb to be given to the

villagers to plant; next morning, however, he found the little boys playing marbles with them.

Even the more civilized Javanese cared little for the seeds of European vegetables which were distributed freely by the Dutch Government. It at last struck some shrewd officer that if the natives saw the results of cultivating these vegetables, they might be induced to turn their attention to them. He therefore obtained permission to establish a model garden, and the result was satisfactory. The Javanese, who had despised the seeds, could not overlook the profit to be derived from the sale of the crops of potatoes, cabbages, and other esculents, displayed for their imitation, and were then grateful for seeds. Nothing but some such scheme will ever induce the Dayaks to alter their present slovenly system of cultivation.

Among those who accompanied us to Marei Parei was a young lad, whom we paid for his services in gray shirting and thin brass wire. As soon as he had received them, he cut off three inches of the wire, and began beating out one end and sharpening the other: it was to make a needle. His sister brought him some native-made thread, then with his knife he cut the cloth into a proper shape, and set to work to make a pair of trousers, nor did he cease his occupation till they were finished, and by evening he was wearing them.

We were so pleased with our visit to the Marei Parei spur that we determined to move thither for a few days, with our servants, and live in tents. In the meantime we continued our collection of Kiau words, which, with our interpreters, was difficult work.

It has been thought that the tribes living around Kina Balu speak different languages, but we found, on the contrary, that the Ida'an, Dusun, and even the Bisaya, can converse freely with each other. We had with us, during our different expeditions, Bisayas from the river Kalias, opposite Labuan, an interpreter who had learnt the language from the people in the interior of Membakut, Malays who had learnt it at Kimanis, Dusuns from Tamparuli, and Ida'an from the plains of Tampasuk; and yet, after a few days, to become accustomed to the differences of dialect, all these men conversed freely with the Kiaus. If they are asked whether they speak the same languages, they will answer, "No," and give as an example—"We say *iso*, when the Kiaus say *eiso*, for 'no';" but these are only localisms. I must add, that none of these people had ever visited the Kiaus until they accompanied us.

In making vocabularies here we found the villagers very careless in their pronunciation: for instance, the word "heavy" was at different times written down, *magat*, *bagat*, *wagat*, and *ogat*; for "rice," *wagas* and *ogas*; for "to bathe," *padshu*, *padsiu*, and *madsiu*, and indifferently pronounced in these various ways by the same people. Many years previously, when I was at Maludu Bay, I collected a few words of the Ida'an, and they were essentially the same as those of the aborigines on the Tampasuk; and the Malays tell me that the Ida'an of the north-eastern coast speak so as to be understood by them, who have acquired their knowledge on the western coast. I may here observe that the same people are indifferently called Dusun and Ida'an. The term Dusun, the real meaning of

which is villager, is applied to these northern inhabitants of Borneo by the Malays, while the Bajus generally call them Ida'an.

While we were making preparation for our short visit to Marei Parei, we noticed some agitation among the Kiaus, and found it arose from a report that a large party of Europeans had arrived at Bawang, on the Tawaran, on their way to the mountain, and it was added, heavy guns had been heard at sea. We could not, of course, offer any explanation, but thought there was very little likelihood of any one coming to join us, and suggested, what proved to be the truth, that the news of our own arrival at Bawang had been reaching them by a circuitous route. We treated the report with so much indifference as to satisfy their suspicious minds.

The next morning, the men who had agreed to carry our bedding refused to fulfil their contract unless paid double wages, so we started with our own servants, but were quickly followed by the recusants, who eagerly shouldered the heaviest burdens. They were only trying how far they could succeed in imposition. The Pop also took a load. That name was affixed to him, on our first visit, from his great attention to dress, and the favour shown him by all the young girls, more due to his evident good-nature than to his good looks; he was, however, an active, powerful man. When we were here in April, he had just married a fine girl, named Sukan, and used always, when the crowd surrounded us, to be seen standing behind her with his arms folded round her neck. He was better mannered than any of his neighbours, and

never annoyed us by begging. He it was who told us he had been to the lake, and followed the route through Tuhan, Inserban, and Barbar. His name is Kamá. I mention him, because he might prove useful as a guide to the lake, should any traveller be induced to try that journey.

We followed the same path we used on the former occasion—across the Pinokok valley, and up the buttress, till we reached Marei Parei, and encamped on a rocky, dry spot near the place where the *Nepenthes Rajah* was found in the greatest abundance.

Knowing that the cold would be severely felt by our followers, accustomed all their lives to the heat of the plains, we tried to induce them to take precautions, but without avail. We, however, took care of ourselves by cutting enough brushwood to raise our bedding a foot above the damp ground, to fill up the end of our tent and cover it over with bushes, grass, and reeds, to prevent the cold piercing through. Around us were thickets of magnolias, but without flowers, and among the other shrubs which grew near was one which we selected for our beds, as when bruised it emitted a myrtle-like fragrance.

The temperature was very pleasant in the afternoon, being  $75^{\circ}$  in the shade; but this was partly caused by the refraction from the rocky soil around. In the water the thermometer marked  $66.5^{\circ}$ , but at sunset it fell to  $60^{\circ}$  in our tent, and the men, too late, began to repent of their idleness.

The vegetation around is very stunted, though above the trees are large: the former is due to the stony nature of the soil and the great amount of iron which



renders all compass bearings untrustworthy. It is, I believe, decomposed serpentine, containing a large quantity of peroxide of iron. Above the vegetation the mountain presents nothing but rough precipices impossible to ascend. On their face we noticed broad white patches and white lines running across, similar to those I observed on the summit during my former ascent. On the top of the north-west peak there rose a heap of stones, which, through a good telescope, looked like a cairn, and we were full of conjectures as to the possibility of a traveller in ancient times having made the ascent. This apparent cairn was afterwards explained by similar heaps of granite piled up as if by man, though they were simply the harder portions of the rock remaining when the rest had crumbled away.

At sunrise the thermometer marked  $55^{\circ}$ , and the air felt very chilly, so, after a cup of chocolate to warm our blood, we started to explore the slopes above us.

Dr. Hooker having kindly allowed me to make use of his descriptions of the wonderful pitcher-plants discovered during these expeditions, I shall avail myself of the permission, and introduce here his notes on the Bornean species of *Nepenthes*, as well as the botanical account of the ones found on the Marei Parei spur.

The largest was the *Nepenthes Rajah*. The plates, copied from those published in the *Linnean Transactions*, merely give the form, as it has been found necessary to reduce them to the size of the volume.

“The want of any important characters in the flowers and fruit of *Nepenthes* is a very remarkable

feature of these plants. The leaves differ considerably in insertion, and in being more or less petioled. The pitchers of most, when young, are shorter, and provided with two ciliated wings in front; more mature plants bear longer pitchers, with the wings reduced to thickened lines. The glandular portion of the pitcher remains more constant than any other, and the difference between the form of old and young pitchers is often chiefly confined to the further development of the superior glandular portion into a neck or tube.”\*

“*Ascidia magna, ore mediocri, annulo latissime explanato, dense lamellato v. costato.* . . .

“*Nepenthes Rajah, H. f. (Frutex, 4-pedalis, Low).* Foliis maximis 2-pedalibus, oblongo-lanceolatis petiolo costaque crassissimis, ascidiis giganteis (cum operculo 1-2-pedalibus) ampullaceis ore contracto, stipite folio peltatim affixo, annulo maximo lato everso crebre lamellato, operculo amplissimo ovato-cordato, ascidium totum æquante.—(*Tab. LXXII.*)

“*Hab.*—Borneo, north coast, on Kina Balu, alt. 5,000 feet (*Low*). This wonderful plant is certainly one of the most striking vegetable productions hitherto discovered, and, in this respect, is worthy of taking place side by side with the *Rafflesia Arnoldii*. It hence bears the title of my friend Rajah Brooke, of whose services, in its native place, it may be commemorative among botanists. . . . I have only two specimens of leaves and pitchers, both quite similar, but one twice as large as the other. Of these, the leaf of the larger is 18 inches long, exclusive of the petioles,

\* *The Transactions of the Linnean Society of London.* Vol. XXII., Part IV., p. 419,

which is as thick as the thumb and 7-8 broad, very coriaceous and glabrous, with indistinct nerves. The stipes of the pitcher is given off below the apex of the leaf, is 20 inches long, and as thick as the finger. The broad ampullaceous pitcher is 6 inches in diameter, and 12 long: it has two fimbriated wings in front, is covered with long rusty hairs above, is wholly studded with glands within; and the broad annulus is everted, and 1-1½ inch in diameter. Operculum shortly stipitate, 10 inches long and 8 broad.

“The inflorescence is hardly in proportion. Male raceme, 30 inches long, of which 20 are occupied by the flowers; upper part and flowers clothed with short rusty pubescence. Peduncles slender, simple or bifid. Fruiting raceme stout. Peduncles 1½ inches long, often bifid. Capsule, ¾ inch long, ⅓ broad, rather turgid, densely covered with rusty tomentum.”\*

The pitchers, as I have before observed, rest on the ground in a circle, and the young plants have cups of the same form as those of the old ones. While the men were cooking their rice, we sat before the tent enjoying our chocolate and observing one of our followers carrying water in a splendid specimen of the *Nepenthes Rajah*, desired him to bring it to us, and found that it held exactly four pint bottles. It was 19 inches in circumference. We afterwards saw others apparently much larger, and Mr. Low, while wandering in search of flowers, came upon one in which was a drowned rat.

As we ascended, we left the brushwood and entered

\* *The Transactions of the Linnean Society of London.* Vol. XXII., Part IV., p. 421.





a tangled jungle, in which few of the trees were large. The spur of the mountain became very narrow, sometimes not much wider than the path, and was greatly encumbered at one part by the twining stems of the *Nepenthes Edwardsiana*. This handsome plant was not, however, much diffused along the spur, but confined to a space about a quarter of a mile in length, and climbed upon the trees around, with its fine pitchers hanging from all the lower boughs. We measured one plant and it was twenty feet in length, quite smooth, and the leaves of a very acute shape at both ends. It is a long, cylindrical, finely-frilled pitcher, growing on every leaf; one we picked measured twenty-one inches and a half long, by two and a half in breadth. They swell out a little towards the base, which is bright pea green, the rest of the cylinder being of a brilliant brick-red colour. Its mouth is nearly circular, the border surrounding it being finely formed of thin plates about a sixth of an inch apart, and about the same in height, and both of a flesh colour; the handsome lid is of a circular shape. The dried specimen forwarded to Dr. Hooker only measured eighteen inches. The plant is epiphytal, growing on casuarinas (*species nova*). The pitchers of the young creepers precisely resemble those of the older ones, except in size.

Whilst examining these, and vainly searching for their seeds, Mr. Low came upon a small species of a bright crimson; its pitchers were three inches long, and one and a half broad at the widest part, and the mouth was oblique. Another, but which may be the same in a more mature state, was green, with irregular

spots of purple, having stems of the latter colour; it was a low plant, not reaching above four feet in height.

A very handsome plant of a trailing habit also grew on this spur having large bunches of beautiful flowers of the colour of the brightest of the seedling scarlet geraniums, and while endeavouring to obtain a view to the eastward, my eye fell upon something of a dazzling white, which proved to be a lovely orchid. Of these Mr. Low made a great collection; I fear, however, it is not a new species.

The following is the botanical description of the *Nepenthes Edwardsiana* :—

“*Ascidia magna, ore lamellis latis disciformibus annularibus remotis instructo.*

“*Nepenthes Edwardsiana*, Low. MSS. — Foliiis (6" longis) crasse coriaceis longe petiolatis ellipticis, ascidiis magnis crasse pedunculatis cylindraceis basi ventricosis 8—18" longis, ore lamellis annularibus distantibus rigidis magnis cristato, collo elongato erecto operculo cordato-rotundato, racemo simplici, rachi pedicellisq[ue] ferrugineo-tomentosis.—(Tab. LXX.)

“*Hab.*—Kina Balu, north side; alt. 6,000–8,000 feet (*Low*).

“The leaves, ascidia, and pitchers sent by Mr. Low are all old, and nearly glabrous; but the young parts, —rachis, peduncles of the panicle, and the calyx— are covered with ferruginous tomentum. One of the pitchers sent is eighteen inches long from the base to the apex of the erect operculum; it is two and a half inches in diameter below the mouth, one and a half at the narrowest part (about one-third distant from the base) and the swollen part above the base is about

two inches in diameter. The beautiful annular discs which surround the mouth are three-quarters of an inch in diameter.”\*

We had occasionally very extensive prospects, and the day being bright and sunny, could obtain almost an uninterrupted view of the whole coast from Kinanis to Tampasuk, with glimpses of the river reaches below, winding among the hills and flowing through the open plains of Tampasuk, Sulaman, and Tawaran. Beneath our feet were the sources of the Peñgantaran, which we crossed on our last expedition. The only interruption was, in fact, the double peaks of Saduk Saduk, which is about 6,000 feet high, and as we only ascended 6,200 feet, we were but beginning to see over them. One side of that mountain is almost cleared to its summit for rice plantations, though the produce could not be very repaying. Mr. Lobb reached its top, but had, I believe, no instruments to fix its height. From the north the two peaks are in a line, it then appears a sharp hill; and I should judge from its aspect that it is sandstone to the summit.

We carefully examined the noble buttress on which we were encamped, and were convinced that if ever the north of Borneo fall into the hands of a European power, no spot could be better suited for barracks than Marei Parei. The climate is delightful: at sunrise the average was  $56^{\circ}$ ; midday,  $75^{\circ}$ ; sunset,  $63^{\circ}$ ; and this temperature would keep European soldiers in good health: there is water at hand, and up the western spur a road could be easily made

\* *The Transactions of the Linnean Society of London.* Vol. XXII., Part IV., p. 420.



suited to cattle and horses ; in fact, buffaloes are now occasionally driven from Labang Labang to Sayap.

The second day our men were more amenable to advice, and made great preparations to resist the cold, as the wind was rising and rain threatening ; but after a heavy shower, it cleared off, and we passed a very pleasant night. We found the most sustaining and warming nourishment on the mountains, was a couple of fowls stewed with a two-pound tin of preserved soup. As we scarcely ever rested much during the day our appetites were keen, and we retired to our beds very shortly after seven to enjoy an almost uninterrupted sleep from eight till daylight.

Having finished collecting the plants of this spur, we returned to Kiau, and noticed during our walk that the sources of the Hobang and Pinokok cut very deep valleys into the actual mountain, and after the heavy rain last night, foaming cascades were visible in these as yet unlit valleys, for the morning sun had not risen above the mountain tops.

The villagers appeared to be very glad to get us back among them, and the girls became friendly and familiar ; they even approached us and sat at the end of our mats, and talked, and laughed, and addressed us little speeches, which were, of course, nearly unintelligible, though we were making progress in the language. They had evidently been very much interested in all our movements, and as our toilettes were made in public, they could observe that every morning we bathed, cleaned our teeth, brushed and combed our hair, and went through our other ordinary occupations.

They had now grown more bold, and were obviously making fun of the scrupulous care we were bestowing on our persons while the cook was preparing our breakfast. We thought we would good-humouredly turn the laugh against them, so we selected one who had the dirtiest face—and it was difficult to select where all were dirty—and asked her to glance at herself in a looking-glass. She did so, and passed it round to the others; we then asked which they thought looked best, cleanliness or dirt: this was received with a universal giggle.

We had brought with us several dozen cheap looking-glasses, so we told Iseiom, the daughter of Li Mounḡ, our host, that if she would go and wash her face we would give her one. She treated the offer with scorn, tossed her head, and went into her father's room. But about half an hour afterwards, we saw her come into the house and try to mix quietly with the crowd; but it was of no use, her companions soon noticed she had a clean face, and pushed her into the front to be inspected. She blushinglly received her looking-glass and ran away, amid the laughter of the crowd. The example had a great effect, however, and before evening the following girls had received a looking-glass. I mention their names as specimens:—Ikara, Beiom, Sugan, Rambeiong, Iduṅgat, Tirandam, Idoṅḡ, Sei, and Sinéo. Among the males near were Kadsio, the trouser-maker, Bintarang, Lakaman, and Banul, who had lent his kitchen to us.

We spent a couple of days quietly at the village, waiting the arrival of our party: reports often reached us that they were not far off, and at last they came in,

but sadly reduced in numbers. Seven had deserted, while one had stayed behind to look after his companion Sahat, who had been stricken with cholera, while passing through Si Nilau. However, they brought sufficient rice to last us during the ascent of the mountain, as well as a few condiments for ourselves. We heard also to our satisfaction, that the chief of Gantisan had seized the negro, and had confined him for theft and desertion.

All our preparations being completed, we started for the summit of the mountain, following a path along the side of the valley, which ran below the houses, and was crossed by miniature torrents at various places. The ground was all under cultivation, principally tobacco and kiladis. Being in admirable walking condition from our regular exercise, we soon passed the hut where Mr. Low had rested during my former ascent, and crossing the stream, found ourselves in freshly-cleared ground, where crowds of women and children were planting rice. The ashes from the burning of the trees and brushwood must assist greatly to fertilize the soil, otherwise we could scarcely conceive that seed placed in little holes driven in the hard-baked ground could produce a crop. It was a burning hot day, and our men appeared to suffer severely in passing along this unsheltered path, so it was a relief to enter the forest.

We advanced by the same way I followed on the previous occasion; it was steep, and but rarely traversed, except by the rat-snarers. The farther we advanced, the more numerous were the traps, but during our ascent none were caught. In fact, these

wary animals are seldom taken, except when trying to escape from the active village curs. We heard the shouts of the hunters below, and the bark of the dogs, but had passed on before they reached the path. The mountain-rat seems a favourite article of food among the Kiaus, though they do not eat those which frequent the houses. The edible animal is about the size of the grey Norway rat, and is of the Bandacoot species.

At 4,400 feet elevation we pitched our tents, and here Li Moung and Li Maing, who had accompanied us so far, handed us over to the younger men, headed by Kama, and returned home. We hired both these leaders, as we were unwilling to be the cause of a feud arising in the tribe, and by following this course kept friends with both parties.

Started early next morning, and after three hours climbing of the sub-spurs, which were occasionally very steep, we reached the ridge of the great buttress, and the walking became easier. We passed to-day the hut that I had constructed on the former journey. As I have before observed, this ridge is occasionally very narrow, and where it has been exposed to the full force of the monsoons, the trees bent over, so as often to necessitate our crawling beneath their overhanging trunks; for those who carried burdens it was tiresome work, particularly as the ground and trees were covered with soppy moss, cold and unpleasant to the touch. Where we did not crawl, we had often to advance in a stooping posture. Occasionally we passed between fine forest trees, with thickly-growing bamboo beneath them, but these were only to be found in deep or shel-

tered spots. When we joined the first ridge, we came upon numerous flowers of a rhododendron scattered over the surface of the ground, and it was some time before we could find the plant, but Mr. Low's quick eye at last discovered it. It looked gorgeous, being completely covered with bunches of flowers of a brilliant scarlet, and in masses of colour, as forty-two blossoms were counted growing in one of the bunches.

We at last reached a narrow, rocky ridge, covered with brushwood, but with thousands of plants of the beautiful *Nepenthes Lowii* growing among them. As water was to be had near, at a little marshy spot, we determined to pitch our tents here, and spend the evening collecting specimens. Our guides, however, strongly objected to this, and declared we must reach the cave that night; but as this involved another climb of nearly 3,000 feet, we declined, disregarding their threats that they would leave us where we were and return to their houses. Our coast-men appeared totally unfit for such an exertion, though the cold weather had an invigorating effect upon ourselves.

There was another great objection to this rapid ascent: it prevented our seeing anything, or enjoying the views which this lovely weather promised to afford. It was true that day the scenery had been obscured by the blinding columns of smoke rising in every direction from the burning felled forest, but that objection might not hold another day. To the eastward, we had glimpses of high mountains, and of a river running through a plain.

I have seldom witnessed any of those beautiful phenomena of which I have read—as double sunsets





—but that evening we beheld one. A dark cloud hung over the horizon, and beneath it we saw a sun, clear and well-defined, set in vapour: we hurried on our preparations for the night, for fear darkness should overtake us, when the true sun, suddenly bursting from behind the concealing cloud, restored the day. I never saw men so astonished as were our followers, and we were as completely deceived as they, though we did not give the same explanation, that we had fallen among jinn and other supernatural beings.

We sent our men on next morning to wait for us at the cave, while we stayed behind to collect specimens of the *Nepenthes Lowii* and the *Nepenthes Villosa*. The former is, in my opinion, the loveliest of them all, and its shape is most elegant. I will give Dr. Hooker's botanical description of both.

“*Ascidia magna, curva, basi inflata, medio constricta, dein ampliata, infundibuliformia; ore maximo, latissimo, annulo O.*

“*Nepenthes Lowii, H. f.*—Caule robusto tereti, foliis crasse coriaceis, longe crasse petiolatis lineariblongis, ascidiis magnis curvis basi ventricosus medio valde constrictis, ore maximo ampliato, annulo O, operculo oblongo intus dense longe setoso. (*Tab. LXXI.*)

“*Hab.*—Kina Balu; alt. 6,000–8,000 feet (*Low*).

“A noble species, with very remarkable pitchers, quite unlike those of any other species. They are curved, 4–10 inches long, swollen at the base, then much constricted, and suddenly dilating to a broad, wide, open mouth, with glossy shelving inner walls, and a minute row of low tubercles round the circumference; they are of a bright pea green, mottled



inside with purple. The leaves closely resemble those of *Edwardsiana* and *Boschiana* in size, form, and texture, but are more linear-oblong. ◦

“I have specimens of what are sent as the male flower and fruit, but not being attached, I have not ventured to describe them as such. The male raceme is eight inches long, dense flowered. Peduncles simple. Perianth with depressed glands on the inner surface, externally rufous and pubescent. Column long and slender. *Female* inflorescence: a very dense oblong panicle; rachis, peduncles, perianth, and fruit-covered with rusty tomentum. Capsules, two-thirds of an inch long, one-sixth of an inch broad.”

The outside colour of the pitchers is a bright pea-green, the inside dark mahogany; the lid is green, while the glandular are mahogany-coloured. A very elegant claret jug might be made of this shape.

“*Ascidia magna, ore lamellis latis disciformibus annularibus remotis instructo.*

“*Nepenthes Villosa*, H. f. (Hook, Ic. Pl. t. 888). —*Ascidia magna turgida late pyriformia coriacea, 5'' longa, 3½'' lata, alis anticis mediocribus grosse dentatis, ore aperto annulo maximo! lamellis annularibus distantibus disciformibus rigidis, 1'' diam., cristatis posticis in spinas rigidas ½'' longas, fundum ascidii spectantibus productis, collo elongato erecto, operculo orbiculato intus densissime glanduloso dorso basi longe cornuto. (Tab. LXIX.)*

“*Hab.*—Borneo (*Lobb*), Kina Balu, alt. 8,000–9,000 feet (*Low*).

\* *The Transactions of the Linnean Society of London.* Vol. XXII., Part IV., p. 420.





“ . . . The whole inner surface of the pitcher is glandular, except a very narrow area beneath the mouth at the back.”

The pitchers of the young plant resemble the old, and their colour looks like that of a downy peach skin, with a great deal of dark crimson in it. The circular annulus is like flesh-coloured wax, its lid dull green, with red shading in the centre.

The *Nepenthes Villosa* continued to skirt our path for the next two thousand feet; and among the most extraordinary shrubs was the heath rhododendron.

At an open space about 7,500 feet above the level of the sea, we had a fine view to the south and south-east of Kina Balu, stretching away to the great river of Kina Batañgan. Numerous mountain ranges and lofty peaks, some estimated as high as 7,000 to 8,000 feet, were clearly visible. Between us and the mountains bearing south-east by east, and apparently eighteen miles off, there was a grassy plain, perhaps three miles by two, in which were many villages; and through this there flowed a rather large river. We could trace its course as far as the third spur springing from the main buttress of Kina Balu, on which we now stood. There, a line of hills appeared to obstruct it; but beyond we could again trace the course of a stream which may probably be its source. This river, our guide stated, falls into the lake. It runs from south-west to north-east. With the exception of the plain above mentioned, and a marsh, whose commencement we could observe north-east of

the plain, all the country appeared hilly. Most of the land was cleared, and either under cultivation, or showing the remains of former farms. We could observe in the second valley two villages: the first called Tuhan, the next Inserban. At both cotton is stated to be cultivated. Many more distant villages and detached houses could be seen to the south-east, whose names our guides had forgotten.

The road to the lake is by the above-mentioned villages. The names of those beyond are Penusuk, Tambian, Paka, and Koporiŋan. These are either on the route, or close to the lake.

We sat looking at this extensive view, and enjoying the refreshing breeze and bright sun. Kama was in a communicative mood to-day, and we had a long talk about the great lake. We could clearly perceive that it was not in the position assigned to it in all the maps, as the whole country from east-south-east to the western coast was distinctly visible, and the Ida'an expressly stated that it was farther to the north and east of the little plain I have before noticed. Its size would, I believe, entirely depend on the season, as the heavy rains would cause it to overflow the country, and probably add to its extent the marsh and plain we saw.

We then continued our ascent to the cave by the same path I followed before, and found it quite sufficient for a day's journey. The cave proved to be above 9,000 feet above the level of the sea, and although we tried by fires and hanging up oiled-cloths before the entrance to keep out the raw night air, yet the men felt it very cold.

Started early next morning for the summit, with a clear sky and a brilliant sun, through thickets of the scarlet and rosy-purple rhododendrons which extended for nearly a thousand feet above the cave, and soon reached the granite slopes, which, by the clinometer, we found to have an angle varying from  $35^{\circ}$  to  $39^{\circ}$  at the steepest parts. Leaving Low's Gully on the right, where the purple or rather blood-coloured rhododendron flourishes, we pushed on for the terrace lying between the southern and northern peaks.

As I spent very little of my time in looking for plants, I reached it long before my fellow-traveller, and was surprised to find the great ease with which we could converse, although more than a quarter of a mile apart. It really required no effort, and the air appeared so transparent as to render it difficult to judge of distances. From Low's Gully to the north-western peak does not exceed two miles; and we were struck by a remarkable feature in the granite rocks, which run in a broken line along the northern face of the summit. It appeared as if they were lying in strata, which partly accounts for the angular granite we observed in the streams at the base.

When I first reached the terrace the sun was shining brightly on the landscape below, and my first impulse was to turn to look for that lofty mountain of which I had obtained a glimpse during my former ascent, but the southern peak shut in that view, and I had to content myself with the still extensive prospect. Looking over the valley of Pinokok, I could distinctly trace the coast line down even to Labuan, which, though somewhat hazy, was yet visible, near the

great mountains of Brayong and Si Guntang. The Bay of Kimanis was to be seen in all its distinctness, and with Nosong Point, Pulo Tiga, and Papar Headland, looked at this distance almost land-locked. Gaya island was there visible, but the bay was masked by its surrounding hills. Mengkabong and Sulaman waters distinctly appeared, and I could occasionally observe some reaches of the Tawaran glistening among the fruit groves of the plain. The horizon was perhaps distant a hundred miles, showing a broad expanse of ocean. We stood looking at this prospect with great pleasure; but at last, being joined by the man who carried the barometer, I left Mr. Low to prepare the instrument, and started for the north-western peak, from which I hoped to have the most extensive view to be seen in all Borneo, and to have the satisfaction of examining that heap of stones which looked like a cairn from below.

It was easy to get there. At its northern foot there were heaps of broken but angular granite, which appeared to have fallen from its sides, leaving a perpendicular scarp a little overhanging at the summit. The slabs of granite, which peel off its western and southern sides, roll on a sharp slope, and must glide down to fall over the great precipice overlooking the valley of Pinokok. The heaps I observed to the south move more slowly onward towards the cliff, as the incline is less.

I tried to reach the summit of this peak by a narrow ledge of rock abutting from its southern front; but after proceeding with my face towards the cliff, and moving sideways with my arms stretched out on either

side, till the path narrowed to about eight inches, I thought it prudent to return; but at a spot where I had secure footing, I pitched a stone on the summit, which was about forty feet above the highest point I reached.

I had scarcely regained the base, when I saw a thick white cloud suddenly sweep up from the north, and heavy rain and gusts of wind soon wetted us through and chilled us to the bone. I hurried along the huge natural wall which skirts the northern edge of the summit, and is the termination of the great terrace, to join Mr. Low, and then heard that last night's rain had wet the leather of Adie's barometer, so that it would not act. We tried the boiling-water thermometers, but in this storm of wind, rain, and hail, though we managed to light the spirit-lamp, we could not read the number of degrees, the apparatus appearing defective. We waited for nearly two hours, hoping it would blow over; but it only increased in violence, and enveloped in this rain-cloud, we could not see fifty yards.

Unwillingly we now attended to the remonstrances of our shivering followers, and commenced the descent. The wind veered round suddenly to the east, and drove the sleet and hail into our faces, while torrents formed in every direction, and rushed over the smooth surface of the granite. To descend was a work of danger, as the streams crossed our path in every direction; and had we lost our footing while passing them, we should have been sent gliding down to the precipices. It was bitterly cold, the thermometer at two P.M. falling to 43°. As we approached



the steepest incline, the velocity of the running water increased, and in one place, even Kamá appeared at fault, as the granite was as slippery as glass, being reduced to a fine polish, as it formed the course down which the rains always ran; but at last finding a crevice, into which we could insert the sides of our feet, we managed to pass the momentarily swelling torrent. One of our Malays was seized with fever and ague at this most difficult part of the descent, but he behaved manfully, and managed, by his own exertions, to get down the granite slopes. My Chinese boy, Ahtan, fell, and rolled over several times, but escaped with a slight wound, but heavy bruises. One Malay's feet slipped from under him, and he fell heavily on his back, but his head escaped, as he was carrying on his shoulders a large basketful of flowers.

During both ascents, I observed the men carefully examining the crevices of the granite in search of little pieces of very transparent quartz, which were to be found there. I picked up, during the former visit, a few of them, that were greatly prized by the ladies of the capital, who had them set in rings.

After three hours' hard work, we reached the cave, in company with our invalids. The poor fever-stricken Malay looked in a woful plight, but we gave him immediately ten grains of quinine in a glass of whiskey, and by evening the fit was over. We found many of our followers were injured by falls, but not seriously. Though Mr. Low made a fine collection of herbaceous and other plants, yet we were greatly disappointed with the result of our ascent, as the injury to the barometer was caused by carelessness.

We determined, however, to re-ascend to the summit next morning ; but on trying the boiling-water thermometers, they did not act properly, and varied five degrees : the barometer also continued useless. We therefore gave up our intention, particularly when we found that all the Ida'an guides were making up their packets, declaring nothing should induce them to go through such exposure as they suffered on the previous day, and as we found many of our men were ailing, we unwillingly, therefore, commenced our further descent, collecting plants by the way, and spent the night at the hut I had erected during my first expedition.

Next day we reached the village of Kiau, and had a very different kind of settling day from the last. Li Moung was civil and obliging, and all appeared sorry at our leaving them, and begged us to return again as soon as possible, promising to take us to the lake, or wherever we might choose to go.

The girls now presented a very different appearance from before : they thronged round us, most of them with carefully-washed faces, and requested us to remember their commissions. Some wanted thread and needles, others looking-glasses and combs. As we did not intend to re-ascend the mountain, we, in return for the neat little baskets of tobacco with which they presented us, made a distribution among them of all our surplus warm clothing, and their delight was great, and Li Moung's daughter took so great a fancy to my comb and brush that, though unwilling, I was obliged to part with them.

When we started next morning, crowds of friendly

faces were around, a troop of girls walked with us part of the way, and on our leaving them at the crown of the hill, they insisted upon our repeating the promise to visit them again. The good impression we made upon these villagers may be of service to future travellers. We stopped at Koung for the night, as many of our followers were ill, or suffering from falls received on that unlucky day on the summit of Kina Balu. We made the old chief's heart glad by presenting him with one of our tents, and such goods as we could spare.

A hundred years ago, it was reported that the Ida'an were in the habit of purchasing Christian slaves of the pirates, in order to put them to death for the sake of the heads. If it were ever true, I believe it is not so now, as we never noticed dried skulls in any of their houses, except at Tamparuli; and if they had been given to any such practice, the Bajus, who never missed an opportunity to malign them, would have mentioned the subject.

As we were anxious to get our large collection of plants as fast as possible to the vessel, we pushed on next morning by the direct route to Buñgol and breakfasted there, and, notwithstanding heavy rain, continued our journey to Kalawat.

Next day we reached Si Nilau, to find that poor Sahat was dead of cholera, and that his companion had disappeared. We inquired about him, but could hear nothing. We asked for the rice that they had left, but the owner of the house denied having any, though one of our guides discovered hidden away in a corner all the goods belonging to Sahat and the missing man. The thief finding himself discovered,

ran into a neighbouring house, beginning to beat the alarm signal on a drum, and in a very short time the neighbouring villagers were seen collecting in arms; but hearing the cause of the disturbance they dispersed, saying the English might settle with the old thief as they pleased. However, on inquiry, finding our missing follower was safe, we merely warned the villager and continued our journey.

On arriving at Bawang we heard the distressing intelligence that cholera was in possession of all the villages. We met processions on the river: old women, dressed up like the priestesses among the Land Dayaks of Sarawak, were chanting and beating gongs, and on the banks of the stream were erected altars, round which gaily-dressed women were dancing with a slow, measured step.

We were surprised at the wealth displayed by the family of the old chief of Tamparuli. There were silks, and gold brocade, with a large amount of gold ornaments. We arrived late, having walked in one day what had taken us three in our advance to the mountain.

During the night we were disturbed by the cries of some of the inmates of our house, three of whom were suffering from attacks of cholera, and the only remedy they appeared to apply was water from the sacred jars, though they endeavoured to drive away the evil spirits by beating gongs and drums all night. Three people had died the previous day, but when we left in the morning the sufferers I have before mentioned were still alive. We had no medicines, not even a glass of spirits, to give them.

Next morning we walked over to Pañgeran Sirail's to breakfast, as our friends at Tamparuli were so much taken up with the awful visitation which had come upon them as to be unable to attend to anything else. In fact, though exceedingly hungry after our hard walking, we could not last night purchase anything for our dinner, and had to content ourselves with plain boiled rice. The Malay chief, however, was very hospitable, and soon procured us fowls, and sent off to Pañgeran Duroup for canoes to take us across the lake. On our arrival at Gantisan we found the cholera had left, though not before it had carried off thirty-seven victims.

Signor Cuarteron came to visit us, and we kept him to dinner; but, in the evening, the south-west monsoon commenced blowing so heavily, that it was impossible for him to return to the vessel, and this was merely a commencement of what we had to expect. In the morning, however, it cleared up a little, and we landed to visit Pañgeran Madoud. He was erecting a very substantial-looking wharf, nearly a hundred yards in length, to enable people to get ashore at all times of tide, and intended it partly to give protection to very small trading prahus during the south-west monsoon. It was a grand work for a Malay to conceive, and, although not constructed in a way likely to be very lasting, it was a good commencement. The Pañgeran had established himself in a very comfortable house, and in his audience hall had a large table and many chairs. He was very curious to hear everything connected with the great mountain, and begged, laughingly, for a single seed of the lagundi fruit, that his

youth might be restored to him. We found the negro looking very sad in the stocks, but he got off with a very slight punishment; however, as a warning to others, we refused to receive the deserters on board, and let them return in a native prahu.

We did not attempt to sail, as dark clouds were driving across the horizon, threatening unsettled weather; and, in the afternoon, so heavy a squall arose, that our anchor could not hold, and we began drifting towards the shore. We hauled in the chain, but when it was nearly all on board, we were not ten feet from the coral reefs opposite Gantisian. With extreme difficulty, on account of the breaking waves, we got the smaller anchor into our boat, and sent it out fifty yards ahead, and hauling in that merely saved us from striking, as it came home as well as the larger one. For two hours we continued sending out one anchor after the other, but it did not keep us clear of the danger, as during a heavy puff our pinnace struck the coral, and we thought she would soon go to pieces; but this blast was followed by a momentary lull, during which we managed to haul out a hundred yards, and let go both anchors, and, veering out as much chain as we could, we felt comparatively safe. The storm broke on us again with great violence, but our anchors held.

For three days this dirty weather continued, blowing steadily from the south-west, and we had some difficulty in procuring supplies of rice for our men. In fact, the village had but little in store, as all communication with the Dusuns had been put a stop to on account of the cholera. It was, therefore, fortunate we had not delayed our expedition till August, for we certainly

should have been turned back, as all the paths were now interdicted.

•On the fifth day, the wind appearing to moderate, we set sail from Gantisan, intending to pass through the broad channel, between Gaya and Sapanggar Islands; but, when we opened the sea, the waves were breaking in white foam, and so heavy a swell came in that our pinnace could not beat against the wind: we, therefore, ran into a small harbour on the north of Gaya Island, and anchored in thirteen fathoms. In the evening we landed, but, finding the jungle tangled, did not penetrate far; and, leaving Mr. Low to botanize, I strolled along the beach to the rocky sandstone point.

I came there upon certain stones which appeared to me very curious. On the surface of some were marks, as if huge cups, three feet in diameter, had been let into the rock and then filled up with a different kind of sandstone. One only did I see which was detached from the surrounding rock; it was circular, with an edge two inches thick, raised three inches above the inner surface.

This little harbour is plentifully supplied with water, as several small rivulets fall into it from the surrounding high land. We could observe the waves breaking on the sands and rocks at the mouth of the Ananam, while the wind drove the sea through the narrow and dangerous passage between Gaya Island and the mainland. At night very heavy rain came on, and the wind moderated.

Next morning, there being a slight land breeze at early dawn, we stood out to sea, notwithstanding the

heavy swell, as the leaves of our mountain collection were beginning to fade from their long confinement on board, though we had brought proper boxes in which to plant them. We speedily got clear of the harbour, but no sooner did we begin to shape our course down the coast, and get to the leeward of Gaya Island, than the breeze failed us, and the roll of the China seas appeared to be forcing us on the rocky point not half a mile off. We manned our boat, and attempted to tow the pinnacle off shore, but our efforts would have been in vain had not the ebb tide gradually swept us beyond the island, and thus restored to us the faint land breeze. Presently it died away, but we were now beyond immediate danger, and though the heavy swell continued, there were no waves. As the sun was warm and brilliant, we felt sure that in the afternoon we should have a fine sea breeze, so that we were proportionably annoyed when our head man came to tell us they had forgotten to replenish their casks at Gaya Island, and were now without water. We sent the boat away, as it was impossible to foretell how many days we might be at sea; but before they returned, heavy clouds began to show on the western horizon, threatening bad weather.

I never saw a more singular sight, as the long line of black cloud gradually gathered above the sea, leaving a clear space below it, and waterspouts began to form. I counted at one time seventeen, either perfect or commencing. I carefully watched the whole process: the cloud appears to dip a little, and the sea below is agitated and covered with foam; gradually a pillar begins to descend from on high with a gyrating



motion, and a corresponding pillar rises from the sea. Sometimes they meet, and the whole object is completed; at others, they do not, and the water falls back into the ocean with great disturbance. I have watched them trying again and again to meet: sometimes the wind drives the cloud-pillar to an acute angle, and prevents the junction; at others, vain efforts, as vainly repeated, are made by sea and cloud. I have heard so many stories of danger to ships from these waterspouts that I always felt rather nervous when passing them in a very small vessel. Our boat being still away, we took advantage of the commencement of the sea breeze to run under one of the islets to the south of Gaya and anchor there. Between the larger island and the point of Api Api on the mainland we once attempted to pass, but grounded on a coral reef; however, there is a passage, but a difficult one to those accustomed to the coast.

I am not aware who inserted the names in the Admiralty charts, but they are often ill spelt, and incorrectly placed. Loney Island, south of Gaya, is generally called Sinitahan, "Hold here," Island, from the great protection it affords to native prahus in both monsoons; and our informants insisted that the islands marked Bantok, Baral, and Risa, should be Memanukan, Sulug, and Memutik, and that the opposite point, called Lutut, or the Knee, should be Aru. I only mention this, as some of the officers in Labuan might be requested to furnish the correct names to the Admiralty, as it is exceedingly inconvenient to voyagers along the coast to ask for places by names which are not recognized by the inhabitants.

While speaking of these otherwise admirably correct charts, I would draw attention to the fact, that the position of the Tanjong Baram, or Baram Point, in the last published general chart of Borneo, differs about ten miles from that given in the charts recording the surveys of Sir Edward Belcher and Commander Gordon. This requires explanation.

Our boat having joined us, we got under way, and stood towards Pulo Tiga; the weather was squally and the night proved unpleasant, with strong gusts of wind and heavy rain, but in the morning we found ourselves opposite the island for which we were steering. A light land breeze now carried us past Nosong Point, with its curious detached rocks, but left us in a calm after we were a few miles from shore.

As usual, the sea breeze sprang up in the afternoon, but it came from the south-west. Having been awake most of the previous night, we were dozing in the afternoon, when a bustle over our heads startled us, and we went on deck to see what was the matter. We found we were among the Pine-tree Shoals, with a large water-washed rock, not marked in the charts, within fifty yards of us. To let go the anchor and take in the sail, to meet a heavy squall from the westward, was the work of a moment. A heavy squall in a dangerous position is a thing to be remembered: you see advancing upon you an enormous arch of black cloud, with a slightly white misty sky beneath, called by the Malays the wind's eye, and when it breaks upon you with a force almost sufficient to lift you from your legs and sweep you into the sea, you feel your own nothingness, and how impotent

are most of our efforts to contend against the elements.

.That day it blew heavily, and much depended whether it were good holding ground, but our principal fear was that another water-washed rock might be astern, on which if our vessel bumped she must go to pieces. The villagers from the neighbouring coast saw our danger, and thronged to the beach; but we paid little attention to them, as we kept our eyes on two points to watch if the pinnacle drifted. The sea as far as the eye could reach was one sheet of curling waves, crested with foam, which broke upon our bows and washed our decks; but as the wind became stronger, we veered out cable, though cautiously, as we were uncertain what hidden dangers there might be astern. It was an anxious time, as the squall lasted two hours without abatement; but even storms must have an end, and half an hour before sunset the wind lessened, as it often does about that time, and we sent out our boat to sound, and were soon able to have the pinnacle towed clear of the water-washed rock, and setting sail we stood out to sea in a north-westerly direction to give us a good offing. We sat up by turns all that night, and amused ourselves by watching the hundreds of stars that fell or shot across the heavens, as is usual in the month of August; and I saw a brilliant meteor of a bluish colour, which appeared in the east, and flashed across the dark sky to disappear almost in a moment. We reached Labuan by daylight the following morning.

I am sorry to say that we did not fulfil our promise to the Kiaus, to go and explore the lake. I fully in-

tended doing so during my last visit to Borneo, but was prevented by my return home. I had not forgotten their commissions, and had provided myself with a large store of needles and thread, which were, however, equally prized by the ladies of Brunei.

I must add a few remarks respecting the plates of the *Nepenthes* which appear in this volume; they are copied, as I have before observed, from the magnificent outlines published in the *Transactions of the Linnean Society of London*. It is impossible to obtain a complete idea of these astonishing pitchers from the lithographs I have inserted, as I have been obliged to reduce them to the size of my work.

## CHAPTER XI.

THE PHYSICAL AND POLITICAL GEOGRAPHY OF THE  
DISTRICTS LYING BETWEEN GAYA BAY AND THE  
TAMPASUK RIVER; WITH A GEOGRAPHICAL SKETCH  
OF MALUDU BAY AND THE NORTH-EAST COAST OF  
BORNEO.\*

THE coast line, as viewed from the sea, presents the following appearance : Gaya Island and the shores of Gaya and Sapangar Bays are hilly, and this continues to within a mile of the mouth of the Mengkabong ; the land then becomes flat, with the exception of the Tambalan hill, as far as the mouth of the Sulaman creek or river. High land then commences, which continues for a short distance beyond the Abai, when it again becomes low, and presents the same appearance for many miles beyond the Tampasuk river, the coast being fringed with casuarinas.

\* I have inserted this chapter, though, in fact, it contains but a summary of the geographical information collected during our two expeditions to Kina Balu, and some previous coasting voyages. It necessarily involves repetition, but I hope will prove useful to geographers who may be desirous to have the subject presented to them in one view, and it will help to elucidate the map of these districts. To render it more complete, I have added a geographical description of Maludu Bay and the north-east coast of Borneo. .

The mouths of the rivers Ananam, Kabatuan, Mengkabong, Tawaran, Sulaman, Abai, and Tampasuk are all shallow, and unfit for European vessels; the deepest having but nine feet at low water, and with the exception of the Ananam, Kabatuan, and Abai, are much exposed during both monsoons, and are rendered dangerous by the numerous sandbanks that lie off their mouths. The Ananam in Gaya Bay, and the Kabatuan in Sapangar Bay, are only suited for native craft. The Abai has more water, and its mouth being sheltered, small vessels, at certain times of tide, might enter; within, the river deepens to four fathoms, and the surrounding hills render it a perfectly land-locked harbour.

There are several bays along this coast which insure complete shelter for shipping. The finest of these harbours is that composed of the two bays Gaya and Sapangar, which is large enough to afford protection during both monsoons for every vessel that trades to the East; it contains within itself minor harbours, as one on the north-east of Gaya Island, which has thirteen fathoms, and is perfectly safe; while abundance of fresh water may be obtained on its western shore. Lokporin, in Sapangar Bay, is also a secure anchorage. Gantisan, the Malay town on the north-eastern shore, though good for shipping, is not so secure for very small craft, as squalls from the south-west raise rather a heavy sea there. Several coral reefs jut out from the northern shore, with deep water on either side of them. This harbour is the most important in Borneo, from its commanding position in the China seas, and from its great security.

Good shelter may also be found in Ambong and Usukan Bays, but I have not entered them myself. Ambong is described as running deep into the land, and surrounded by hills with smooth surfaces and of gentle ascent; the alternations of wood and cleared land affording a most beautiful landscape. The harbour of Ambong abounds in beautiful sheltered little bays, but barred by coral patches, which rise exactly from the spots where they disturb the utility of these snug retreats.\* The next, Abai, affords excellent shelter during both monsoons, though open to the north-west; it is, however, of inferior importance, though fresh water may be obtained in small quantities on the grassy plain at the entrance of the river: water, however, is rarely absent where the land is hilly. Wherever the country is low, and occasionally elsewhere, there are sandy beaches. The west end of Gaya Island, Gaya Head, and the points between Sulaman and Abai, are rocky.

Passing the coast line, the country presents varied forms; the hills that surround Gaya harbour are low, and cleared at the top, bearing at present a rank crop of grass; others have a reddish tint, from the ferruginous nature of the soil; the rest are covered with jungle. On entering the Kabatuan, the banks are lined with a narrow belt of mangrove, but the hills rise immediately at the back, and this character appears to extend far into the interior both of the Kabatuan and Mengkabong. From the latter river, to the Sulaman stretches a plain, perhaps seven miles in width, varied by a few very low hills. The country

\* *Voyage of the Samarang*, vol. i. p. 190.

changes here, and broken ranges extend to the Abai : hill and plain are then intermixed ; but as soon as we approach the Tampasuk, the country opens, and, for Borneo, an extensive plain spreads out, reaching to the foot of the Maludu mountains. It is, however, occasionally diversified by low, undulating sandstone hills.

This flat, level ground is admirably adapted for rice cultivation, as it is grass land, without any forest trees. On leaving these plains, ranges of hills commence, rising generally with great abruptness, presenting steep sides and narrow ridges, and running, for the most part, in an east and west direction. There are, however, exceptions to the above description : a few of the hills have easy slopes, and many of the ranges are connected by cross ridges running north and south, particularly at the heads of valleys where the waters of the different tributaries flow in opposite directions to join their main rivers. The highest of the hills we measured was under 3,000 feet. The ranges towards the interior are higher, and at the back of these are very lofty mountains, including Kina Balu,\* 13,698 feet (Belcher) ; Saduk Saduk, about 6,000 feet ; and others, whose names we could not obtain, estimated at above 7,000 feet. All the hills in these districts that we examined consisted of sandstone until we reached Kina Balu.

With regard to the height of that mountain, various opinions have been entertained ; but until some one is fortunate enough to reach its summit with a good barometer, I think we may rest contented with Sir

\* Called Kini by the Dusuns and Ida'an.



Edward Belcher's measurement by trigonometry. He makes it 13,698 feet. Mr. Low, on his first ascent, had a very inferior instrument; while during the last two expeditions we were provided with magnificent barometers by Adie; but unfortunate accidents rendered them useless. However, sufficient observations were taken to show that the first barometer was incorrect, and, though both inclined, during our original joint expedition, to place the height of the mountain at about 11,000 feet, the last makes us feel assured that we underrated the height. I am, therefore, inclined, from all observations made, to think that Sir Edward Belcher's measurement is correct.

The summit of Kina Balu consists of syenite granite, which is in many places so jointed as to give it the appearance of being stratified. About ten peaks spring from a line running from east to west, while about half a mile to the southward rises another detached peak. Between the latter and the western portion of the former is an open space, like a broad terrace, with sloping sides, down which huge slabs are continually gliding. The southern peak presents a very different aspect, according to the point from which we view it: from the terrace, it looks sharp, not above a yard in breadth; while from the east and west it seems quite rounded. This renders it comparatively easy of ascent. On three sides it is perpendicular, while, on the south, it presents no material difficulty. Without careful barometrical observations it will be impossible to fix on the highest peak. From several views, the southern, the summit of which I gained during the

first expedition, and have, in consequence, named St. John's Peak, appeared as high as the others, while from the terrace both east and west appeared rather higher.' The west has a rounded appearance; but we failed to discover a way of ascending to its summit. I reached within perhaps forty feet, when it presented only perpendicular sides. It is gradually giving way before atmospheric influences, its northern base being covered with huge angular stones that have fallen; the summit is still overhanging, and much of it apparently ready to topple over. Between the western and eastern peaks, on the edge of the cliffs which overlook deep chasms below, is a sort of wall, principally of huge granite rocks, some so perched on the others that at first sight it appears the work of man—geologically explained, I suppose, by the wearing away of the softer portions of the rock around. Some of the peaks present the appearance of a thumb, while others are massive, as those that rise on either side of the spot where Mr. Low, in 1851, left a bottle. This I have named Low's Gully, in remembrance of the first Englishman who ever ascended this mountain.

The summit is above two miles in length; and I observed that, in descending to its N.W. and E. spurs, the rocks assume a perfectly serrated appearance. Kina Balu extends a long distance towards the N.E. or E.N.E., its height varying perhaps from 10,000 to 11,000 feet: but partially divided from the parent mountain by a deep chasm. From the top, we did not see this portion of the mountain; in fact, the mist generally obscured the view, leaving but patches visible. The summit of the mountain, as I have

before observed, consists of syenite granite; but every here and there it is crossed by belts of a white rock. For about 3,000 feet below the peaks there is but little vegetation, and the face of granite sweeps steeply up at an angle of  $37\frac{1}{2}$  degrees. In the gullies, and in other sheltered spots are thickets of flowering shrubs, principally of rhododendrons—a few even extending to the base of the peaks, particularly in the “bottle gully.”

From what we observed, the summit of the mountain can only be reached by the way we followed—I mean above the cave, or at about 9,000 feet. To that spot there are said to be two paths. Kina Balu throws out, on every side, great shoulders, or spurs, which have also their sub-spurs. The principal are the N.W., very steep; the W.N.W., which subdivides. On the western face of the mountain there are but minor spurs, which leave 5,000 feet of precipice above them. From the southward, two huge spurs extend: on one is the village of Kiau. It springs from the left of the southern face, and running S.W., turns to west and by north, and subdivides. The next spur that springs from the eastern portion of the southern face is, in every respect, the most important. It may be called, for the sake of distinction, the main spur. Those to the left we could not observe fully, as we then only saw them from above, but from the north-east coast they appeared to slope very gradually. The main spur runs at first to the S.W. for about five miles; it then follows almost a S.S.W. direction for about twenty miles, throwing off, on either side, many sub-spurs. A glance at the map of these districts will

best explain my meaning. This is the range that is observed from the sea, and gave the notion of a backbone to Borneo; but beyond these twenty-five miles it does not appear to extend. In fact, mountain ranges, running to the east and west, are distinctly visible—the first, at not a greater distance than thirty-five or thirty-six miles, appears to cross close to the end of the main spur. If we were disappointed by not obtaining complete views from the summit, we were partially repaid by the clear view we had of the country lying to the S. and S.E. of Kina Balu. We were at an elevation of between 7,000 and 8,000 feet on the main spur, and observed numerous mountain ranges whose bearings I will give.

High peaked mountains .	S. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. ...	8,000ft....	30 miles distance.
„ „	S.E. by E. .	7,000ft....	18 „
„ „	S.E. by E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E	7,000ft....	18 „
A range: highest peak .	S.....	8,000ft....	25 „
„ „	S.S.W. ...	—	70 „
A range: eastern end of a long table range run- ning E. by N. and W. by S. ....	S.S.E. ....	—	60 „
A peak .....			
A long range (peak).....	S.E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E....	—	very distant.
	S.E. ....	—	„

The latter is stated to be in the Kina Batañgan country. The distances and heights are estimated.

Between us and the mountains, bearing S.E. by E. eighteen miles, there was a grassy plain, perhaps three miles by two, on which were many villages, and through this there flowed a fair-sized river. We could trace its course as far as the third spur that springs from the main one; then a line of hills appeared to obstruct it; but beyond we could again trace the course

of a stream, which is probably its source. This river, it was stated by the people of the country, flows into a lake of Kina Balu. It runs from the S.W. to the N.E. With the exception of the plain above-mentioned and a marsh, whose commencement we could observe north-east of the plain, all the country appeared hilly, and most of the land was cleared, and either under cultivation, or showed the remains of former plantations. We could observe in the second valley two villages—the first called Tuhan, the next Inserban, and at both cotton is said to be cultivated. Many villages and detached houses were also observed, whose names our guides had forgotten. The road to the lake is by the two above-mentioned villages, while the names of those beyond are Penusuk, Tambian, Paka, and Koporiŋgan—these are stated to be on the route, or close to the lake. A few words concerning this mythic sheet of water, as it has generally been considered: that it exists to the east of the mountain appears from inquiry to be almost certain. Its size it is unnecessary to estimate, though our informants stated that, standing on one bank, it was not possible to see the opposite one. It cannot, however, be of the great size marked in the old maps, or in the situation assigned to it, as the whole country, from E.S.E. to the western coast, was distinctly visible, and the Ida'an expressly stated that it was farther to the north and east of the plain I have before noticed. Mr. Low made many inquiries during our first trip, and we jointly questioned the Ida'an, on many occasions during our long stay at the Kiau village, and they spoke of it as a certainty, many affirming that they themselves had

been on trading expeditions to it. I may add that Mr. De Crespigny, who lived some time at Maludu Bay, heard that the lake was to the south of Kina Balu, where it certainly is not. Peterman's map is entirely incorrect as to the position of the lake.

I must now make a few remarks on the vegetation which covered the mountain. Cultivation extends, in a few places, to the height of 3,500 feet, but beyond that there is a fine jungle, on the main spur, to the height of 6,000 feet; it then begins to degenerate, and in the exposed portion of the ridge the trees are bent across the path, inferior in size and covered with moss. But above this height, in sheltered spots, the trees again increase in size; beyond 7,000 feet, however, there are few fine trees, the vegetation changing its character, most of it consisting of flowering shrubs, varying in height from ten to twenty feet. The trees, however, on the sides of the spurs continued of a comparatively large size until we had passed 9,000 feet; at 10,000 feet the shrubbery became very straggling, and above that it was only scattered among the granite rocks. On the W.N.W. spur, called the Marei Parei, the vegetation even at 4,500 feet was exceedingly stunted in many places; while above, in equally exposed situations, the jungle was of fair size: probably, the nature of the soil may account for it, that of the Marei Parei district being formed of decomposed serpentine, containing very much peroxide of iron. Kina Balu appears to be the seat of the nepenthes, Mr. Low having made a collection of extraordinary-shaped ones—perhaps the most beautiful in the world.

At the risk of repetition, I will make a few observa-

tions on each of the rivers which drain these districts. I have already remarked that the shallowness of their mouths renders them unfit for European commerce; in fact, the fresh-water streams soon become mere mountain torrents. The Ananam I have not ascended; the Kabatuan is apparently but a collection of salt-water creeks, with a few fresh-water rivulets. The former town of Meñggatal was situated about three miles up it, and only at flood tide would it float a frigate's barge. Near the town the banks were grassy, and many cocoa-nuts were grown in the neighbourhood. The Mengkabong, also, can scarcely be called a river; it is rather a large salt-water lake with numerous islands, some containing hills of several hundred feet in height; it is very shallow, many portions of it being dry at low tides, while others have but a few inches of water. It appears to be filling up fast, and, perhaps, affords a clue to the cause of the formation of the plains that extend beyond, which all appear to be composed of alluvial deposits. Many fresh-water rivulets drain the neighbouring hills, and pour their waters into this creek, but it is always salt; it extends, perhaps, five or six miles in a straight line from the shore. The Sulaman I have not entered, but I have seen it from the hills on many occasions; it presents the appearance of a lake, and is reported as a salt-water creek. We could observe, by the rivulets that drained into the Tawaran, that the Sulaman has no interior, but it has a depth of twelve feet at its entrance. The Tawaran, on the contrary, is a fresh-water river even to its mouth, the flood-tides making but a slight impression on it. Large native prahus

can safely ascend it for six miles ; after that it depends on the state of the weather, rising and falling very rapidly, as it is influenced by the rains. The banks of the river as far as Bawang village are flat ; there the hills commence ; and three miles beyond the Tawaran divides into two branches ; one coming from the south, the other from the E.S.E. They immediately degenerate into mountain torrents, and are not to be used by boats, but at some risk produce is occasionally brought down on rafts. Every range of hills affords the parent stream a rivulet, but the Tawaran does not penetrate far into the country ; its sources are in the main spur of Kina Balu ; the east branch rising between the second and third sub-spur, on the west side of the main spur ; the southern branch appears very small. On both occasions I passed the Tawaran ; it was of a dirty yellow colour, being filled with the detritus of the neighbouring hills. Land slips are very common, which afford a considerable amount of matter for the torrents to carry seawards. The Tawaran is subject to very sudden inundations, the waters occasionally reaching the houses at the village of Buñgol, though fifty feet above the stream. There is no foundation for Dalrymple's story, which has been often repeated, of the Tawaran rising in the lake ; it evidently springs from the main spur of Kina Balu.

The Abai is a salt-water creek, but preserving more the appearance of a river ; much of both banks are mangrove until we approach the houses. Its depth varies : on the bar it is but one fathom, while inside it deepens to four, and it has a channel to the villages of about two fathoms. It is a favourite anchorage for



native prahus, being admirably adapted for them. Two small rivulets join the Abai; the Gading, and the Paka Paka, both inhabited by the Ida'an.

The Tampasuk is essentially a fresh-water river, very similar to the Tawaran, of no importance to European ships, except that in wet seasons its waters run unmixed half a mile out to sea. It differs from the Tawaran, in having occasionally immense granite boulders in the stream; while the latter drains only a sandstone country; but, like the Tawaran, it divides into two branches; the eastern one flows from the northern portion of Kina Balu. We could observe its direction for nearly ten miles, as it ran through the low land, and its course was E.S.E. from the junction. The Pengantaran, that drains a portion of the north-west of Kina Balu, bringing down immense quantities of blocks of serpentine, is the only other stream worth noticing. The natives seldom make use of the Tampasuk beyond the spot where the river divides, though above it rafts are occasionally used; but it evidently is not a general practice, as the river is filled with fish traps, which require the stream to be dammed across with loose stone walls.

The hills do not press closely to the river's banks; if they do so on one side, the other is certain to have a strip of low land, along which the path is carried; in fact, from the sea to Koung village there is but one steep hill to cross. Sometimes there are small plains, that skirt the banks; at others, gently sloping fields. The steep hills commence a few miles below Koung, on the left bank, and continue, with few exceptions, to the base of Kina Balu. The village of Labang

Labang, on a spur of Saduk Saduk, has an easy slope from Koung, while towards the great mountain it is very steep. Near Labang Labang the river divides and assumes different names: the principal branch is called the Kalupis; the other, the Dahombarang, or Hobang, and this receives the Kini Taki and the Pinokok. Between the Hobang and Pinokok streams is a sort of table-land, about a couple of miles across, by perhaps four in length; it is not absolutely flat, but the ground swells very gently. The Kalupis has its source at the very summit of the hill, and we could trace its course from the time it was but an inch deep, till collecting all the drainage of the top, it dashed past the cave, our resting-place (at 9,000 feet), a fair-sized mountain torrent. About 1,000 feet below, at the head of the Kalupis valley, it throws itself over the rocks, forming a fine cascade of over 1,500 feet in height.

I may notice that off the coast northward of Gaya Bay and the western point of Maludu Bay there is often a very heavy ground swell, and the rollers occasionally are so dangerous as to prevent vessels attempting to communicate with the shallow rivers. I was once very anxious to visit the Pandasan, but when we arrived off its mouth, the rollers looked so dangerous, that the captain of the steamer decided it would be unsafe for the ship's boats to venture in, and I scarcely regretted his determination. The ground swell was so great, that it was almost impossible to stand on deck.

Having noticed the principal features connected with the physical geography, I will add a few notes on what Mr. Hamilton correctly calls political geography.

The population of these districts consists principally of three classes—the Lanun, the Baju, and the Ida'an or Dusun.

The Lanuns were formerly numerous, having populous settlements on the Tawaran and the Tampasuk, as well as on the Pandasan and Layer Layer farther north. They originally came from the large island of Magindanan, which is considered as the most southern of the Philippine group. They have formed settlements on various points as convenient piratical stations, particularly on the north-east coast at Tungku and other places.

As I have elsewhere observed, not only did they pirate by sea, but they created an unappeasable feud with the Ida'an by stealing their children. No race in the Archipelago equals the Lanun in courage; the Ida'an therefore considered it useless to make regular attacks, hung about the villages, and by destroying small parties, forced the Lanuns to leave Tawaran and join their countrymen at Tampasuk. Sir Thomas Cochrane attacked both Pandasan and Tampasuk, which induced the most piratical portion to retire to the north-east coast. At present but few remain in Tampasuk; they are not considered to have more than 150 fighting men; they are essentially strangers and unpopular. They seldom form regular governments, but attach themselves to certain chiefs, who are partial to high-sounding titles, particularly those of Sultan and Rajah. These chiefs are independent of each other, and unite only for defence, or for an extensive expedition. They, however, are gradually leaving these districts. Although Mohamedans, their women

are not shut up; on the contrary, they freely mix with the men, and even join in public deliberations, and are said to be tolerably good-looking. The men I have seen are better featured than the Malays or Bajus. Our slight knowledge of the Lanuns partly arises from the jealousy of the Bornean Government, which used to employ all its influence to prevent their frequenting Labuan in order to trade. This partly arose from a desire to prevent the development of our colony, and partly from an absurd idea that they could thus monopolize their trade; but the Lanuns, though often deterred from visiting our settlement, seldom cared to meet the Bornean nobles.

The Bajus are scattered along the coast, their principal settlements being at Mengkabong and Tampasuk. At Mengkabong they appear numerous, and perhaps could muster 1,000 fighting men; at Tampasuk, they estimate their own number at 600; at Pandasan, 400; at Abai, Sulaman, and Ambong, there are a few. Their origin is involved in obscurity: they are evidently strangers. They self-style themselves Orang Sama, or Sama men. They principally occupy themselves with fishing, manufacturing salt, and with petty trade. Some breed cows, horses, and goats, while a few plant rice, and have small gardens.

They profess the Mohamedan religion, and keep the fast with some strictness; though, like the Malays, are probably but little acquainted with its tenets. The Bajus are not a handsome race; they have generally pinched-up, small faces, low foreheads, but bright eyes. The men are short and slight, but very active; the women have a similar appearance to the men, and are

slighter than the Malay. They wear their hair tied in a knot on the fore part of the crown of the head, which is very unbecoming. The women appeared to have greater liberty than among the Malays, and came and sat near us and conversed. We saw many men that differed totally from the above description; but on inquiry we found they were of mixed breed: one, Bajú, Lanún, Malay, and Chinese; the next, Bajú, Sulu, Lanún, and Malay. In fact, many intermarry, which renders it difficult to give a particular type for one race. The Bajus of Tampasuk nominally acknowledge a Datu as their chief, who receives his authority from Brunei: but they never pay taxes to the supreme Government, and seldom send even a present. They are individually very independent, and render no obedience to their chief, unless it suits their own convenience. They are, therefore, disunited, and unable to make head against the few Lanuns, with whom they have continual quarrels. Every man goes armed, and seldom walks. If he cannot procure a pony, he rides a cow or a buffalo, the latter generally carrying double. Their arms consist of a spear, shield, and sword. Their houses are similar to those of the Malays, being built on posts, sometimes in the water, sometimes on the dry land. In Mengkabong, they are all on the water, and are very poor specimens of leaf-huts. The Tampasuk not affording water accommodation, the houses are built on shore. The only good one was the chief's, which consisted of a planked house of two stories; the lower, occupied by the married portion of the family, consisted of one large room, with broad enclosed verandahs, occupied by the chief, his wife, and his

followers, while the upper was reserved for the young unmarried girls and children. Of furniture there is little—mats, boxes, cooking utensils, and bed places being the principal. In these countries there are no public buildings, no offices, jails, or hospitals, or even a fort or stockade; and the houses being built of but temporary materials, there are no ancient buildings of any description. The Bajus are very fond of cock-fighting, and in order to indulge in this sport with greater satisfaction, carefully rear a very fine breed of fowls, which are famous along the coast. I have seen some of the cocks as large as the Cochinchinese. It is probable they are descended from those brought by the early immigrants from China, as they in no way resemble the ordinary Bornean breed found in every Malay and Dayak village. They fatten readily, and the hens bring up fine broods.

Mixed with the Bajus are a few Borneans; in Gantisan they form the bulk of the village; in Mengkabong they are not numerous; while in the northern districts there are few, if any. Of strangers, an occasional Indian, African, or Chinese may be seen, but they are petty traders, who return to Labuan after a short residence.

The principal inhabitants of these districts consist of the Ida'an or Dusun, the aboriginal population.\* They are essentially the same in appearance as the Dayak, the Kayan, the Murut, and the Bisaya; their houses, dress, and manners are very similar, modified, of course, by circumstances. In the Kabatuan, Meng-

\* Ida'an is the name given them by the Bajus, Dusun by the Borneans.

kabong, Sulaman, and Abai are some tribes of Ida'an, but I have not visited their villages; I shall, therefore, confine myself to those I observed on the Tawaran and Tampasuk.

On the banks of the Tawaran, where it flows through the plain, are many villages of Ida'an, which are often completely hidden by groves of fruit-trees. These men have a civilized appearance, wearing jackets and trousers. "As you advance into the interior, these gradually lessen, clothes being seen only on a few, as at Kiau, near Kina Balu; beyond, they are said to use the bark of trees. Some of the tribes in the Tawaran have followed the Malay fashion of living in small houses suitable for a single family; while others occupy the usual long house, with the broad verandah, and separate rooms only for the families. The house in which we lodged, at Ghinambur on the Tampasuk, was the best I have ever seen among the aborigines. It was boarded with finely-worked planks; the doors strong and excellently made, each also having a small opening for the dogs to go in and out; the flooring of bamboos, beaten out, was very neat and free from all dirt, which I have never before noticed in a Dayak house, where the dogs render everything filthy. The Ghinambur Ida'an are good specimens of the aborigines; they are free from disease, and are clear-skinned; they have good-tempered countenances. None of the women are good-looking; still, they are not ugly. All the girls and young women wear a piece of cloth to conceal their bosoms: it was upheld by strips of coloured rattans: their petticoats were also longer than usual, and the young girls had the

front of the head shaved, like Chinese girls. I did not notice that any of the men of that village were tattooed, but in our walk we had met parties of men from the interior who were so. A tattooed band, two inches broad, stretched in an arc from each shoulder, meeting on their stomachs, then turning off to their hips, and some of them had a tattooed band extending from the shoulder to the hand. Many of their villages are extensive, as Koung, which is large, scattered on a grassy plain, with a portion on the hill above. It is a very pretty spot, the greensward stretching on either side of the river's bank, where their buffaloes and cattle graze. This tribe has the appearance of being rich; they possess abundance of cattle, pigs, fowls, rice, and vegetables, while the river affords them fish. Kiau is also an extensive village, but the houses and the people are very dirty.

None of these Ida'an pay any tribute, though many chiefs on the coast call them their people, but it is merely nominal, no one daring to oppress them. Each village is a separate government, and almost each house independent. They have no established chiefs, but follow the councils of the old men to whom they are related. They have no regular wars, which would induce them to unite more closely; their feuds are but petty quarrels, and in but one house did I observe heads, and that was at the village of Tamparuli in the Tawaran plain. The very fact of troops of girls working in the fields without male protection would prove the security that exists, though every male always walks armed. We had no opportunity of observing any of their ceremonies, and it is



very unsafe 'to trust to the information of interpreters.

The aborigines, in general, are so honest that little notice is taken of this good quality; however, to our surprise, we found that the Ida'an of the hills were not to be trusted. We were warned by the Bajus to take care of our things, but we felt no distrust. However, at Kiau they proved their thievish qualities, which, however, we frightened out of them, as during our second residence we lost nothing there. At the village of Nilau one made an attempt, which we checked.

The Ida'an are essentially agriculturists, and raise rice, sweet potatoes, the kiladi (*Arum*—an esculent root), yams, Indian corn, sugar-cane, tobacco, and cotton. The sugar-cane is only raised for eating in its natural state, while the cotton is confined to certain districts.

I saw the natives ploughing in the Tampasuk; their plough is very simple, and is constructed entirely of wood; it serves rather to scratch the land than really to turn it over. The plough was drawn by a buffalo, and its action was the same as if a pointed stick had been dragged through the land to the depth of about four inches. After ploughing, they use a rough harrow. In the Tawaran they ploughed better, the earth being partially turned over to the depth of about six inches. The Ida'an have divided the land into square fields with narrow banks between them, and each division being as much private property as English land, is considered very valuable, and the banks are made to keep in the water.

Their crops are said to be very plentiful. Simple as this agriculture is, it is superior to anything that exists to the southward of Brunei, and it would be curious if we could investigate the causes that have rendered this small portion of Borneo, between the capital and Maludu Bay, so superior in agriculture to the rest. I think it is obviously a remnant of Chinese civilization. Pepper is not grown north of Gaya Bay, and is confined to the districts between it and the capital.

The Ida'an use a species of sledge made of bamboos, and drawn by buffaloes to take their heavy goods to market. The gardens on the Tawaran are well kept and very neatly fenced in. On the hills the plough is not used, the land being too steep; and there the agriculture presents nothing remarkable, beyond the great care displayed in keeping the crops free from weeds. The tobacco is well attended to, and these districts supply the whole coast as far as the capital, none being imported from abroad. When carefully cured, the flavour is considered good, and the cultivation might be easily extended. Of the cotton I can say little, as I did not find that any of the tribes through whose country we passed cultivated it, though they assured me they purchased their supplies from the villages near the lake. The Tuhan and Inſerban districts produce it, they said, in considerable quantities; and I observed the women, in several places, spinning yarn from the cotton. The Bajus obtain their supplies from a tribe near Maludu Bay. Among the hills the implements of agriculture consist of simply a parang, or chopper, and biliong, or native axe, and the ground is, therefore, no more turned up

than what can be effected by a pointed stick ; in fact, the steepness of the valley sides is against a very improved rice cultivation ; it is better adapted for coffee. Mr. Low, who has much experience, pronounces the soil, a rich orange-coloured loam, to be superior to that of Ceylon, and, Kina Balu being but twenty-five miles from the sea-coast, there are great advantages there. The plains are alluvial and very fertile.

With regard to the amount of population, all estimates would be mere guess work ; but it must be considerable, as little old forest remains, except at the summits of lofty hills ; the rest being either under cultivation, or lying fallow with brushwood upon it. The tribes on the Tampasuk estimated their own numbers at five thousand fighting men ; the Tawaran tribes were equally numerous ; but reducing that estimate, and putting together the various information received, I should be disposed to place the entire population of these districts at above forty thousand people. This is under rather than over the amount.

The five thousand fighting men who are stated by the Ida'an to live in the Tampasuk are, they say, thus divided :—

The Piasau Ida'an	...	...	...	500
Ghinambur	...	...	...	1,000
Buñgol	...	...	...	1,000
Koung	...	...	...	500
Kiau	...	...	...	2,000
Total				5,000

It is impossible to verify this statement, but we may test it slightly by the observations made. The Piasau Ida'an, so named from the extensive groves of cocoa-

nuts that surround their villages (*piasau*, a cocoanut), are spread over the Tampasuk plain, and I think I am understating, when I say we noticed above fifteen villages, and I should have myself placed their numbers much higher than five hundred. Ghinambur was a large village, and there was another of the same Ida'an about a mile off among the hills, which I passed through on our return. Buñgol is also stated at a thousand men. Our Malays, who visited it, said that it was very large; while the extensive village of Tambatuan, Peñgantaran, and Batong, with numerous others among the hills, have to be included in the Ghinambur and Buñgol tribes. Koung is placed at five hundred, which is not a high estimate, there being about three hundred families in the village. Kiau is stated to contain two thousand fighting men; in this number are included the village of Pinokok (small), of Labang Labang (large), of Sayap, which we did not see. I should be inclined to reduce the Kiaus by five hundred men, though we understood them to say that their tribe was numerous beyond the north-western spur, in the neighbourhood of Sayap. I think we shall not be over-estimating the population by placing it at four thousand fighting Ida'an, or sixteen thousand inhabitants. Rejecting the women and children, both male and female, and the aged, one in four may be taken as the combatants. There were many villages on the eastern branch, some of Piasaus, others probably of Buñgol. The great extent of country cleared shows the population to be comparatively numerous. I may make this observation, the result of many years' experience, that I have

seldom found the statements of the natives with regard to population above the true amount. In Sarawak and the neighbouring rivers, where we had better means of ascertaining the correctness of the accounts rendered, I have always found it necessary to add a third to the numbers stated.

The Tawaran, perhaps, contains a population nearly equal to that of the Tampasuk. The villages between the mouth and Bawang are numerous, but much concealed by groves of fruit-trees. Tamparuli was an extensive village, and Bawang of fair size. The Nilau tribe was scattered over the sides of the hills. Kalawat was a large village with perhaps eighty families. Buñgol contains, perhaps, over one hundred and fifty families. The Tagoh, Bañgow, and other villages, were observed on sub-spurs; and beyond Buñgol the tribes must be numerous, if we may judge from the extensive fires made by them, to clear their plantations. On the right-hand branch are also many villages, but we had no opportunity of examining them. By native accounts, the Tawaran district is more populous than the Tampasuk.

Of Ananam I know nothing; of Kabatuan I saw little beyond the Malay town; but I was informed that the Ida'an were numerous in the interior of this river, as well as on the hills that surround Mengkabong. I have placed them at two thousand, which is not a high estimate.

Mengkabong contains also an extensive Baju population, and in estimating them at six thousand, it is, I believe, much below the number. The villages are numerous, and the chief town large. It is possible

that there are not more than a thousand fighting-men, but the Bajus are holders of slaves, and there are also many strangers settled among them.

Sulaman is placed at a thousand, which includes both Baju and Ida'an, and may be a little over the mark; for it I have nothing but vague native testimony.

Abai contains about thirty houses, perhaps not above two hundred people; while on the hills are a few small villages of Ida'an. I have put them at one hundred and twenty-five fighting-men, or five hundred in all.

Tampasuk contains about one hundred and fifty Lanun men, or seven hundred and fifty population. Bajus, five hundred, or two thousand five hundred people. I have multiplied the Lanun and Baju fighting-men by five, as they have many slaves both male and female.

Gaya Bay contains about three hundred people.

The population of these districts may therefore be entered as follows:—

Gaya Bay	...	...	300 Malays and others.
Kabatuan	...	...	1,000 Ida'an.
Mengkabong	...	...	6,000 Bajus and others.
„	...	...	1,000 Ida'an.
Tawaran	...	...	16,000 Ida'an.
Sulaman	...	...	1,000 Ida'an and Bajus.
Abai	...	...	200 Bajus.
„	...	...	500 Ida'an.
Tampasuk	...	...	2,500 Bajus.
„	...	...	750 Lanuns.
„	...	...	16,000 Ida'an.
<hr/>			
Total	...	...	45,250

The only figures in the above which I think may

possibly be overstated, are the Bajus of Tampasuk. We may fairly reckon the population of the districts between Gaya Bay and Tampasuk at forty-five thousand, being quite aware, at the same time, that it is founded on very loose data ; but it may serve as a guide to future inquirers.

There are but trifling manufactures carried on. The Bajus are much occupied in preparing salt for the inland tribes. The only other manufacture that is worth noticing, is that of cloths from native cotton, and the most esteemed are those of the Lanuns. The cloth is generally black, with a few white lines running through it, forming a check. It is strong and more enduring than any other I have seen, and fetches a high price—varying from 1*l.* 5*s.* to 2*l.* 10*s.* for a piece sufficient for a single petticoat. They are, however, deteriorating since the introduction of cheap English yarn, which is superseding the carefully-spun native. No minerals have as yet been discovered in these districts beyond the coal in Gaya Island, though tin has been found to the North of Kina Balu, near one of the streams flowing into Maludu Bay.

There is but little trade carried on: the only articles of export are tobacco, rice, a little wax, cattle, and horses, or rather ponies ; the imports consist of cloths, iron, gongs, and earthenware, with occasionally a valuable jar. Little beyond tobacco is brought from the interior, as everything is carried on men's shoulders, none of their paths being as yet suited for loaded beasts.

It is a great drawback to this country, having

no navigable rivers, nor on the hills have they good paths. The latter are easily made, the country presenting no natural difficulties, while in the plains very fair roads already exist, fit for their sledges. The tribes in the interior are at present far beyond any commerce; in fact, the people near the lake have never been visited by the coast population, and trust to exchanging with the other Ida'an. But as the taste for cloth is evidently on the increase, it is possible the trade may improve. Englishmen travelling in that country do great good by spreading a taste for manufactured goods.

With respect to the languages spoken, I will at present make but few remarks. The Lanun and Baju are entirely different from the language of the Ida'an. I have made several vocabularies and many inquiries. At Kiau, we collected above 400 words; at Blimbing on the Limbang, 300; and whilst in Maludu Bay, seven years ago, I likewise made a short vocabulary. These three agree so far that I may say that the Ida'an and Bisaya have two out of three words in common; and on further inquiry, I think that the remaining one-third will gradually dwindle away, as at present many of the words in my Bisaya vocabulary are Malay, for which they have their native word. The result of my inquiries is that all the Ida'an speak the same language with slight local differences. We found all the tribes on the Tampasuk and Tawaran spoke fluently to each other, and one of our interpreters, who had never before visited these countries, but had been accustomed to the aborigines nearer the capital, conversed freely with them. The



Bisayas live on the rivers in the neighbourhood of Brunei, and their language differs but little from that of the Ida'an.

The Ida'an contains but few Malay words, these generally referring to imported articles and domestic animals. Some are similar to those of the Land Dayaks of Sarawak.

I will add a few remarks on the geology of these districts, premising them, however, by the observation that I am ignorant of the science. Wherever the rocks protruded through the hills, we noticed they were decomposing sandstone; and this character continued until we reached the great mountain. Occasionally, as in Gaya island, the rocks were of a harder texture; and here a Mr. Molley is said to have been shown a vein of coal. In the districts to the west and south of the Tampasuk, we noticed no signs of primitive rock; while in the Tampasuk river, huge boulders of granite are met with a little above Butong, while the débris extends as far as the junction; but the rocks of the hills are sandstone, and this character continues to the base of the mountain. At Koung, the rocks dipped to the south-west by south, at an angle of  $45^{\circ}$ . On the Marei Parei spur, we could trace the sandstone to the height of about 4,000 feet, the dip about  $80^{\circ}$  to the south-west; greenstone immediately after protruded, and appeared to form the chief rock. On the Marei Parei spur, the compass was so affected by the peroxide of iron which formed a sort of coating to the rocks, that it would not act. The main spur consists at first of sandstone; then of shale, almost as hard as stone; and of various rocks

which I could not recognize; then of decomposing granite, above which commences the massive outline of the summit. We found in our collection a piece of limestone that was broken off somewhere near the base of the mountain in the Kalupis valley.

The country presents the appearance of having been originally of sedimentary rocks, through which the granite has forced its way, upheaving the sandstone to an angle of  $80^{\circ}$ .

With regard to the climate, I made a few notes. The plain and low hills are much the same as the rest of Borneo, or other tropical countries; but in the neighbourhood of Kina Balu it is of course different. We found at the village of Kiau that the thermometer never marked above  $77^{\circ}$  during the day, and varied from  $66^{\circ}$  to  $69^{\circ}$  during the nights. The mean of all the latter observations gave a shade below  $68^{\circ}$ . The Marci Parei spur offered a fine position for a sanitarium, at any height between 4,000 feet and 5,000 feet. Our tent was pitched at about 4,700 feet, and we found that the thermometer marked  $75^{\circ}$  (mean) in the mid-day shade,  $56^{\circ}$  at six A.M., and  $63^{\circ}$  (mean) at six P.M. This would be a delightful climate in a well-built house. The cave at 9,000 feet was very cold—at two P.M.  $52^{\circ}$  mean; and during the three nights I slept there on my first expedition, it was  $40^{\circ} 33'$  (mean); ranging between  $36^{\circ} 5'$  and  $43^{\circ}$ . In our last expedition, in the cave, the thermometer marked: 6.30 A.M.,  $43^{\circ}$ ; 9.15 A.M.,  $48^{\circ}$ ; 3.30 P.M.,  $51.250^{\circ}$ ; 6 P.M.,  $45.750^{\circ}$ . Night, registering thermometer:  $41.250^{\circ}$  and  $41^{\circ}$ . On the summit (13,696 feet), during mist and rain, it marked  $52^{\circ}$ ; while exposed to a strong wind and a

storm of sleet and hail, it fell to  $43^{\circ}$ . On a fine day, however, it marked  $62^{\circ}$  in the shade, there being much refraction from the rocks.

I think it most probable that water would freeze on the summit during a similar storm of hail and sleet to which we were exposed, were it to occur during the night-time, as at two P.M. the thermometer fell to  $43^{\circ}$ , though held in the hand; and at the cave (9,000 feet) it fell to  $36.5^{\circ}$  during a very cold night, though partly protected by the tent, and when I went out, I found a sort of hoar-frost on the rocks and leaves.

I must add a few remarks on the map. The sea-line is taken from the Admiralty chart, while the interior I have filled up from the observations and rough plans made during the journey. It may afford some idea of the country, and serve until a traveller with greater advantages makes a better.

I will add a few remarks on that great indentation of the land to the north of Kina Balu, called Maludu Bay, but more correctly Marudu. Steering from the westward, there are two channels by which the northern point of Borneo may be rounded: they are to the north and south of the little island of Kalam-punuan. A sweeping current often renders the latter dangerous, as it would drive a vessel on a reef of rocks that runs off the island. Just before the extreme point is reached there is a small river or creek of Luru, which is also known by the name of Simpañg Meñgayu, or the Cruising Creek, the Sampan Mangy of the Admiralty charts. Round the point there is another, named Karatang, and both are well known to the natives as the spots where the Balignini and Lanun

pirates lurk to catch the trading prahus which pass that way.

An incident occurred to a Bornean acquaintance, named Nakodah Bakir, who had accompanied me on my visit to the Baram River. He had found, from experience, the inutility of arming his vessels with brass swivels of native manufacture; as, though they carry far, they seldom hit anything; so he changed his plan and armed his men with English muskets. Early in the autumn of 1851, he was on a trading voyage to Maludu Bay, and having secured a good cargo, was returning to the capital. As he rounded the northern point, five Lanun boats dashed out of Luru, and pulled towards him, firing their brass swivels, whose balls passed harmlessly through his rigging. He kept his thirty men quiet till the first pirate boat was within fifty yards, when his crew jumped up and fired a volley of musketry into it. This novel reception so astonished the pirates that they gave up the pursuit.

Maludu Bay extends nearly thirty miles inland. The western shore, near the point, is rather flat, but soon rises into a succession of low hills; and as you penetrate deeper into the bay they swell to the proportion of mountains on both shores, and Kina Balu and its attendant ranges form a fine background to the end of the bay, which, for nearly four miles from the shore, shallows from about two fathoms to scarcely sufficient water to float a boat. By keeping the channel, however, the principal river may be reached. The land is quite swampy on both banks, mangrove jungle reaching so within a mile of the town, then nipa palms, mixed

with a few forest trees ; in fact, the whole of the head of the bay appears gradually filling up : the land obviously encroaching on the sea, the nipa palm gaining on the mangrove, which is spreading far out in the salt water on the flat muddy bottom. The rush of the current from these rivers is sometimes so great that we have found the whole head of the bay for five miles completely fresh, and the amount of earth held in suspension renders it of a whitish appearance. The houses are built on a narrow creek on the right-hand bank of the river ; near the country is flat, but the mountains soon skirt the plains. The population of the bay is sufficient to render it a valuable commercial settlement for native traders, if security for life and property could be established, and if the monopolies of the chiefs could be destroyed. To show the insecurity, I may mention that in 1859 the Sultan of Brunei sent a trading prahu there with a valuable cargo. On the return voyage, just as they were leaving the mouth of the river Panchur, the vessel commenced leaking, and they had to land a part of the cargo. The supercargo returned to the town for assistance, and during his absence, a large party of men came into the river, drove away the crew, and carried off all the goods. They were not regular pirates, but a band of Sulus, who could not resist the temptation to plunder.

The monopolies of the chiefs, however, check any intercourse with the producing classes, and thus prevent the possibility of a large increase of trade.

I made many inquiries as to the amount of population which dwells in the districts bordering on this deep bay. I obtained from Sherif Hasan, the son of

Sherif Usman, who formerly ruled these districts with a strong hand, a list of the number of Ida'an families who paid tribute to his father. I then inquired of the chief Budrudin, of Sherifs Musahor, Abdullah, and Houssein, and of a number of traders, and their accounts do not greatly vary.

Sherif Usman received tribute from the following districts :—

Udat	...	...	...	200 families of Ida'an.
Milau	...	...	...	200    "    "    "
Lotong	...	...	...	150    "    "    "
Anduan	...	...	...	50    "    "    "
Motunggong	...	...	...	300    "    "    "
Bira'an	...	...	...	100    "    "    "
Tigaman	...	...	...	250    "    "    "
Taminusan	...	...	...	50    "    "    "
Bintasan	...	...	...	—    "    "    "
Bingkungan	...	...	...	60    "    "    "
Panchur	...	...	...	500    "    "    "
Bungun	...	...	...	300    "    "    "
Tandek	...	...	...	1,500    "    "    "
				<hr/>
				3,660 families.
Add a third	...	...	...	1,220 families not paying revenue.
				<hr/>
Total	...	...	...	4,880 families.

At six to a family, this would give nearly 30,000 people.

Comparing this statement with those given by the assembled chiefs, I find they slightly differ. They reckoned the population at 36,000 people; and I account for it, first, by Sherif Hasan not having given the population of Bintasan; and, secondly, by his only mentioning the number of families on the Buṅgun who paid tribute to his father, there being above a thousand families who did not.

They all represented the district of Bengkoka, not included in the above list, as the most important and populous of all; it is on the eastern coast of the bay, and the river, though barred at the entrance, is reputed deep inside. Its population is stated at 16,000 Ida'an. The Malays and Sulus residing in all these districts are represented as not very numerous; in fact, as under 5,000, of whom 1,500 are at Panchur, 1,500 at Bengkoka, and the rest scattered at the various other villages. If the above figures represent the numbers, there are about 52,000 Ida'an on the banks of the rivers flowing into the bay, and about 5,000 strangers. They all, however, explained that, when they enumerated the Ida'an, they only spoke of those villages which were under the influence of the people of the coast, and that there were many tribes among the mountains with whom they had little intercourse.

I once met a party of these Ida'an; they were a dark, sharp-featured race, intelligent-looking, and appeared in features very much like the Land Dayaks of Sarawak. They were dressed in their war costume, consisting of heavy, padded jackets, but wore the chawat or cloth round their loins. They were slight and short men.

The productions of these districts consist of rattans, wax, camphor, tortoise-shell, tripang or sea-slug, and kaya laka, a sweet-scented wood. Large quantities of rice and tobacco are grown, and, if encouraged, these cultivations would greatly increase. The only minerals as yet discovered are coal in the Bengkoka River, and tin in some stream at the northern base of the Kina

Balu range. I saw specimens of the latter, but no one has ventured to work it yet. The insecurity would prevent the Chinese succeeding.

Starting from the head of Maludu Bay, and skirting the eastern shore, it is found to be shoal off Mobang Point, and on the next inlet, Teluk Mobañg, Sherif Usman endeavoured to establish a village; but while his people were clearing the forest, they were seized with severe vomitings, many dying; all arising, the Malays confidently believe, from the machinations of the evil spirits who had been disturbed in their homes. Leaving the points of Taburi and Si Perak, we pass through the straits formed by the island of Banguay and the mainland. That island is inhabited in the interior by Ida'an, but on the shore many Bajus assemble, collecting tortoise-shell and sea-slug, and they have built their houses at the base of the peak. It was they who pillaged and burnt the British brig *Minerva*, wrecked off Balambañgan, in November, 1848.

I have mentioned the Mengkabong people having treacherously plundered a village on Banguay; the inhabitants consisted of their own race, mixed with a few Sulus and others. The islets to the south-west of Banguay are named Padudañgan (by the Sulus it is called Palarukan), and Patarunan. Indarawan is the name of a small river at the south of Banguay, where, it is said, sufficient good water may be procured to supply vessels. Passing between Mali Wali and a rock off the coast, the soundings are very variable, and the sea appears filled with sandbanks and shoals; in fact, for a frigate, the sea is not sufficiently clear of reefs till we arrive opposite Sandakan Bay.



Commencing from the north-eastern point of Borneo, we first come to a little bay called Batul Ayak, the only inhabitants of which are Bajus, who entirely reside in their boats. Then there is a small river called Kina (China) Bañgun: there are but few people residing there, wanderers with no settled dwellings. After that there is Kang Karasan, where there are probably not more than a couple of hundred Mahommedans, but the Dusuns in the interior are numerous: my informants knew of villages containing above three hundred families. The river Paitan is large and deep, and there are above a thousand Islams living here, and the Ida'an in the interior are represented to be as numerous as the leaves on the trees, and the slopes of the hills are covered with great forests of camphor-trees. I may observe that boxes made of camphor-wood prevent any insects meddling with woollen cloths, and are therefore very useful. Camphor has so powerful an aromatic smell, that it will drive every insect from its neighbourhood.

Passing the stream of Babahar, which is small, and without inhabitants, we arrive at Sugut, to the north of the commencement of Labuk Bay; but it has also a small entrance to the south of it. The Islam population is represented as numerous, while seven thousand families of Ida'an reside in the interior; in consequence of their great superiority of numbers, their chiefs have much influence in those districts. A few elephants are caught here, but the principal exports are rattans, wax, and camphor.

The north-east coast of Borneo, as far as the entrance of the Sugut River, is rather flat, only a few

low hills occasionally diversifying the scene; but no sooner do you round the point, and enter Labuk Bay, than it presents a different aspect: the low hills gradually swell into mountains, one range of which is remarkably peaked—as jagged, from one view, as the edge of a saw. Kina Balu is visible along this coast, and from the eastern side the ascent appears feasible. A vessel steering along the shore finds the navigation difficult, from the numerous shoals, while pretty islets are scattered about in every direction. If the Benggaya be approached in a direct line, the water gradually decreases from three to one and a half fathoms; but, keeping close into the shore, it deepens to five, seven, and no bottom with a ten-fathom line. The country, as viewed from the mouth of this river, presents only mangrove jungle, with an occasional glimpse at the distant mountains: its entrance is very shallow, not deep enough at low tide to float a ship's cutter.

To reach the village of Benggaya, it is necessary to keep to the left-hand branch, avoiding the broad stream which stretches away to the right; but after ten miles the river divides, and it is necessary to pass by the left-hand branch, and continue for about twenty miles farther up a most extraordinarily winding river before the houses are reached. This out-of-the-way situation is chosen to avoid the attacks of pirates. The banks of this river present a continued succession of mangrove and nipa swamp for many miles, only occasionally varied by dry land and fine forest trees. The stream winds in a most extraordinary manner, and at one place the reaches had met, and nothing but a fallen tree prevented a saving of two miles of

distance. The inhabitants consist of a few Islams, called men of Buluŋgan, doubtless fugitives from the Malay State of that name a couple of hundred miles farther south. There is an overland communication between Sugut and Benggaya, prepared by the latter in case of being suddenly surprised, as they have no interior to fly to, and consequently no Ida'an population.

The largest river which runs into this bay is the Labuk, which gives its name to the place. It has three entrances—Kalagan, small; Labuk, large; Sabi, small. Off its mouth is a spot called Lingkabu, famous for its pearl fishery. The productions of this district are principally camphor; wax, rattans, and pearls, and the interior is reported to be well inhabited by the Ida'an. Next to it there is an insignificant village of Islams on the river Suŋgalihut, and is only inhabited on account of the edible birds' nests found in the interior.

Between the eastern point of Labuk Bay and the islands there is a three-fathom channel. The coast is low, with no marked features until we round the point, and the bluff islands of Sandakan Bay are visible. Then the land appears to rise gradually into pretty hills, presenting beautiful slopes for cultivation; but as we approach the entrances of the Kina Bantaŋgan, the land again becomes low. Sandakan Bay itself is a splendid harbour, with a good supply of fresh water. It used to be well inhabited, but on one occasion the villages were surprised by the Balignini pirates, and sacked and burnt by them. The inhabitants who escaped the attack dispersed among the neighbouring

communities, but every year strong parties of the surrounding people assemble there to collect the valuable products of the place, which consist of large quantities of white birds'-nests, pearls, wax, sea-slug, and the best kind of camphor.

About four or five years ago, Mahomed, the ruler of Atas, became so unbearably tyrannical that a large section of the population determined to abandon their country, and hearing of the English settlement of Labuan, resolved to remove there. One of their principal men proceeded first to make arrangements for the others, who in the meantime made temporary dwellings in Sandakan Bay. He sailed round to the north-west coast, and unfortunately put into the Papar river for water. The chief of that district, Pañgeran Omar, detained him and forced him to send up his family to his house. Week after week passed, and they were still kept there, till information reached our colony, when the governor sent an officer to try and release these people, but his representations were treated with contempt, as he had no material force at his back; and the next thing I heard was that the Bornean chief had put the Atas man to death, on pretence that he was about to run amuck, and taken the wife and daughters into his harim, reducing the followers to slavery. When this intelligence reached Sandakan Bay, it is not surprising the fugitives did not venture on the inhospitable north-west coast. The whole affair might have been better managed on our part, and had proper representations been made to the admiral on the station, there is little doubt he would have considered himself authorized to interfere.

Passing this bay, we arrive at the many mouths of the Kina Bataŋgan river; the first, named Bala-batang, is said to connect the river with the bay; the second is Trusan Abai, by which the first village may be reached in seven days. The deepest entrance is Tundong Buaŋgin, and in certain months, perhaps after the rainy season, it is said there is a channel with three fathoms; but in the dry weather the sand again collects and spoils the passage. It is seldom used, except by very large trading prahus, as it takes them thirty days to reach the first village. Judging by the time required by the Bornean boats to reach the town of Laŋgusin, on the Baram river, during the rainy season, we may calculate that with the windings of the river, the first village must be about a hundred miles from the mouth. The Sulu prahus being heavier built, the Bornean ones used in the Baram trade would move a third faster.

The first village on the banks is called Bras Manik. There are numerous hamlets beyond; in fact, the Kina Bataŋgan river is always spoken of as one of the most populous, and by far the most important on the north-eastern coast, and it is the one the chiefs of Sulu watch with the most jealous attention. As this is the only country in Borneo where the elephants are numerous, it is the only one where ivory forms an important article of trade in the eyes of the natives. But the most valuable articles are the remarkably fine white birds'-nests and the camphor, which is collected in large quantities in the old forests which clothe the lofty mountains found in the interior.

Wax, sea-slug, very fine tortoise-shell, and also

pearls, are the articles that render this trade so sought after. The tortoise-shell is collected on the many islands with broad sandy beaches that stud this quiet sea. My servant once found a packet ready prepared for sale left by some careless collector near the remains of a deserted hut. Turtle also frequent these islands; and one day, while walking along the beach with a blue-jacket, we saw a fine animal in shoal water. My companion sprang in, and after a vigorous struggle, in which his shipmates partly assisted, he turned the beast on his back and towed him ashore, to afford, next day, excellent turtle soup for the whole ship's company. The natives generally despise rattans as articles of export, on account of their great bulk, otherwise they might collect sufficient to load many ships. The principal articles of import into these countries are gray shirtings, chintzes, red cloth, iron, steel, brass wire, beads, and powder and muskets. With opium, they say themselves, they are sufficiently supplied by the Lanun pirates, who obtain it from the prahus they capture among the Dutch islands.

Sigama is the next river, and has but a small population of Islams, though there are many Ida'an in the interior.

Cape Unsang is low and marked by few characteristic features, but on rounding the point becomes steadily prettier until we reach the Tungku river, when it presents a beautiful succession of low hills, with the mountain of Siriki to the left, which is a good mark to discover the pirate haunt of Tungku. All the small rivers on the southern shore of Cape

Unsang are barred, not admitting a ship's barge at low-water—at least, we did not find deeper channels. I saw here a shark, the largest I have ever noticed: it swam to and fro in the shallow water, eyeing the English seamen who were dragging their boats over the sands, but it did not venture near enough to be dangerous. We were sitting in the gig a little to seaward, and it passed and repassed within a few yards of us, and I thought it must have been fifteen feet in length, but the imagination is apt to wander on such occasions, and as it swam in very shallow water, it appeared to show more of its back than usual. As the officers and men were on particular service, no one attempted to put a ball into it. Tungku appeared a type of the neighbouring districts: near the sea it is flat, occasionally varied by a low hill. I walked several hours through this country, and never before saw more luxuriant crops; the rice stalks were over our heads, the sugar cane was of enormous girth, and the pepper vines had a most flourishing appearance: the soil must be of the very finest quality.

I have visited none of the districts on the east coast to the south of Tungku, but I heard that the people of Tidong, as of old, are troubling the neighbouring countries, as the Dayaks of Seribas and Sakarang did the north-west coast when I first reached Borneo. In sight of Cape Unsang, are many islands, at present the resort of the Balignini, as Tawi Tawi and Binadan. A chief from the former captured a Spanish schooner in 1859, and was reported to have found the daughter of the captain on board. The

Spanish Government made many efforts to recover her; but by native report she still lives with her captor, Panglima Taupan, who treats her with every attention and considers her his principal wife. I heard last year she had borne a child to him, and was now unwilling to leave him.

The inhabitants of the north-east coast may be divided into Pagan and Mohamedan. The former are Ida'an, no doubt exactly similar to their countrymen found on the opposite coast; but at Sugut the natives affirm there is a tribe who have a short tail. I have elsewhere mentioned that my informant declared he had felt it: it was four inches long, and quite stiff; and that at their houses they were provided with seats with holes for this uncomfortable prolongation of the spine; the poorer people contented themselves with sitting on simple logs of wood, allowing the tail to hang over. It is quite possible there may have been some instances in a tribe, as I have heard that this deformity has been known in Europe; and from one or two would soon arise the story of the tribes with tails.

I do not think I have mentioned elsewhere that I have seen Dayaks who carry little mats hanging down their backs, fastened to their waistcloths, on which they sit: they always have them there, ready to be used. I at first thought that the story of the men with tails arose from that, or from the method of wearing the waistcloth adopted by some of the tribes: they twist it round their loins, and have one end hanging down in front, the other behind, but some so manage it that the resemblance to a tail at a little



distance is remarkable, particularly when the men are running fast.

The Mohamedan population of the north-east coast consist of Sulus, Bajus, and a few Lanuns, together with slaves, consisting of captives made by the pirates during their cruises among the various islands of the Archipelago, and sold at that great slave-mart, Sugh, the capital of Sulu. The districts of the north-east coast are nearly all governed by chiefs from Sulu, or by the descendants of the Arab adventurers who all assume the title of Serib, or, more correctly, Sherif. They do their utmost to monopolize the trade, and do not hesitate to cut off any native prahus who may venture on that coast; and Europeans have avoided all connection with it for many years; the last attempt was made by a Mr. Burns, who lost life and ship in Maludu Bay in 1851.

END OF VOL. I.



Recently Published.

# HISTORY OF THE FOUR CONQUESTS OF ENGLAND.

° By JAMES AUGUSTUS ST. JOHN

IN TWO VOLUMES.

---

"Gives evidence of the courage and learning which enable a man to form and assert his own opinions."—*Westminster Review*.

"A history, and a very able history of England, from the earliest times to the death of the first Norman monarch. . . . We have no hesitation in saying, that it is in our estimation the best history of the Anglo-Saxons for the general reader we possess. . . . Mr. St. John is a writer of great talent as well as a zealous investigator of historical truth: and his language possesses always the attraction of vigour and elegance, while it is often poetical, and in his descriptions extremely picturesque. He displays, moreover, an intimate and a quick appreciation of individual character, as well as of the causes and motives of political and social action among our Anglo-Saxon forefathers, which we find in none of his predecessors. . . . In conclusion we can only repeat the high opinion we entertain of Mr. St. John's labours. He has given us the best history of the Anglo-Saxons we now possess; and what is more, he has known how to clothe the truth of history with the attractions of romance."—*Literary Gazette*.

"Here are two volumes which reflect credit on the patience, research, industry, and learning of the author. The story of the Four Conquests has never been narrated more lucidly or less dryly. The one is not made to succeed to the other as an independent narrative; but each is shown to have been a natural and inevitable consequence of the one by which it was preceded; and thus to the four divisions in which the series of wars is portrayed is given the interest and the warmth of a continuous history. Mr. St. John has done his work well and honestly."—*Athenæum*.

"Mr. St. John writes as a patriot; he recognizes no period in the history of his country when its population deserved the character of uncivilized savages, which so many writers have attributed to the aboriginal Britons. . . . As we approach the period of the Norman Conquest, there is more historical light, and far less room for conjecture than in the earlier times. . . . All this is well told, and the account of the battle of Hastings which crowned it with success is one of the most stirring we have ever read. . . . We heartily accord him our praise for the thoroughly English spirit in which his history is written, and for the manliness of the sentiments by which it is pervaded."—*Daily News*.

"Mr. St. John has done a good work. If he has occasionally allowed his feelings to get the better of his impartiality, he has evidently tried to arrive at the truth; and we think that his work will ever be regarded as a worthy addition to English literature, by a more than usually conscientious and painstaking historian."—*Critic*.

"The happiest part of this history will be found in the descriptions of the appearance and products of the island at the various epochs referred to, and in the sketches of the great men who stand out as light-houses above the surrounding darkness."—*Globe*.

"Mr. St. John has worthily devoted himself to the production as his *magnum opus* of a history of that great mingling of races which has resulted in the growth of the English people. . . . With patient care Mr. St. John has unravelled the tangled

web of the history of these great events. . . . The result is a history, the best adapted for popular reading, the most complete and compact narrative of the early history of this great country, which we possess. And what a history it is! . . . We are unwilling to lay down the book without a warm tribute to the author for the research and fairness which distinguish it; and to the general vigour and picturesqueness of style with which he narrates the history of the four conquests."—*Weekly Dispatch*.

"The title of this book is in itself very remarkable. . . . The book itself is as remarkable as its title, which scarcely gives an adequate idea of its full scope or contents. It is in fact a most masterly history of England, from the time of Julius Cæsar to the death of the last invader, William the Conqueror."—*London Review*, first notice.

"What is indisputable is the vastness of the service which Mr. St. John has done to the history and literature of his country. In the history of the times to which it refers, these volumes will undoubtedly for the future be the text-book of all historical students; and the further such students prosecute their investigations, the more sensible will be their gratitude to the author who has aided their studies by thus setting before them so vast an amount of valuable information in so accessible and attractive a form."—*London Review*, second notice.

"His narrative is generally fluent in style and interesting in matter."—*Spectator*.

"Mr. St. John's two octavo volumes compress an extensive field of history within a concentrated and distinct view, exhibiting the progress of our country from the days beyond the Romans, down to the development of the actual English nation after the Norman Conquest. Mr. St. John is an accomplished and agreeable writer; he has been a very industrious reader, possesses a clear and graceful pen, and enables us to travel at a rapid rate through the pages of ancient chronicles and modern historians. . . . We can heartily recommend his volumes to the thoughtful student who wishes to learn something more from history than isolated achievements of barren dates."—*Daily Telegraph*.

"The familiar story is worth reading again in Mr. St. John's vigorous and precise narrative."—*Examiner*.

"This book is deserving of every praise. Although full of historical detail, it never wearies; and it has the advantage of being a perfect history."—*Observer*.

"The work which will entitle Mr. St. John to a proud position among the historians of this or any other age, written in a chaste and classic style; the events are truthfully and impartially described, and the deductions are drawn with logical accuracy."—*Weekly Times*.

"This work, as compared with what passed for history a generation back, certainly shows what steps historical science has taken. . . . Mr. St. John throws himself heart and soul into the defence of Godwin and Harold. He could not take up a better cause. In point of style Mr. St. John is clear and vivid."—*Saturday Review*.

"Mr. St. John has again taken up his pen to tell the story of the Four Conquests of England in one continuous tale; he has for the first time given a clear and concise account, and described with great vividness and animation the history of the wars to which the separate invasions by Roman, Saxon, Dane, and Norman gave birth. . . . The book is an interesting addition to our historic literature, and will be found by those fond of historical studies to form pleasant and attractive reading."—*New Quarterly Review*.

"We give words of sincere praise to Mr. St. John's account of England during the period lying between the first invasion of the Romans and the completion of the Norman Conquest. It is not the least of this writer's merits that he does not 'pad' his story of things said and done with too many reflections upon doubtful points. . . . We should be glad, indeed, if the example set in these volumes by Mr. St. John—the example, we mean, of clear story-telling and intelligent forbearance as to what lies beyond—were likely to be followed by other historians."—*Illustrated Times*.

"A work of considerable research and ability."—*North American Review*.





*Bound by*

*Bharati.*

13, Patwarjagan Lane,

Date.....**18 SEP. 1958**

919.11/JOH



7297

